Climate Change

A Study From Creation to New Creation

A study of the created world from its very good beginning, through the Curse and the Flood, to the present climate controversy and the new creation promised beyond it.

Copyright 2026

Distribution of this study as is in its entirety is permitted & encouraged.

Author: John Lobota

Research Assistant: Claude Cowork

papertiq@bellsouth.net

Table of Contents

Introduction — The Word That Was Not Silent **4**
What creation alone already tells every man, the heavens as God's first spoken word, why the written word was then given, the simplicity of salvation — then the case against this study at full strength, and how to read its weighing notes and verdicts.

Chapter One — "Very Good" **11**
The ordered, finished, thriving world Genesis 1-2 actually describes: the length of a real day proven from the Hebrew, the weight of "very good," the sky as timekeeper and testimony, the mist that watered the whole earth, and a world without predator or grave.

Chapter Two-A — "The Curse and a Groaning World" **32**
The Fall, the Curse, and the long, abundant, increasingly rebellious centuries between Eden and Noah's Flood — cities, music, metalwork, giants, and a civilization that turned inheritance into idolatry.

Chapter Two-B — "The Story of Man: Everyday Life From Eden to Ararat" **38**
Everything the first two chapters established, told as a single continuous story — Adam formed, taught, and filled with holy spirit without measure; the garden, the Fall, the long overlapping centuries; Noah's preaching, the ark, the Flood, and a family beginning the world again.

Chapter Three — "Six Thousand Years Since Eden" **56**
Where the Bible's own clock starts, how it was measured generation by generation, why the deep-time framework is comparatively recent, and what Y-chromosome DNA research independently points back to.

Chapter Four — "The Flood That Reshaped the World" **62**
What physically happened to produce a global Flood: the fountains of the great deep, catastrophic plate tectonics as a working model, and where all that water finally went.

Chapter Five — "Rock Layers in Weeks, Not Eons" **65**
Mount St. Helens as a real-time analog, the Grand Canyon's own rock tested directly, sandstone folded while still soft, the ancient lake that may have carved the canyon, and polystrate fossils — each weighed against its mainstream answer.

Chapter Six — "Coal, Oil, and Fossils — Made Fast" **70**
Two competing models for how coal, oil, and gas formed, tested against laboratory work, Mount St. Helens, the chemistry of oil and soft tissue in dinosaur bone — the whole buried treasury of the Flood: gas and helium, limestone, salt, phosphate, uranium and water — and the buried impact craters, such as Ames, Oklahoma, that hold some of it.

Chapter Seven — "A Blessing and a Curse" **78**
What coal, oil, gas and the Flood's other resources have given mankind — longer lives, less poverty, bread for billions — the steward's charge God gave with them, and every reason men failed to keep it.

Chapter Eight — "What Man Has Put Into the Air" **85**
From medieval coal smoke to the killing fogs of Donora, London and New York; leaded gasoline, acid rain, mercury, the ozone hole, jet exhaust and road dust; and eight million deaths a year — each with a plain verdict.

Chapter Nine — "What Man Has Put Into the Water, the Land, and Our Own Bodies" **90**
The plenty the first explorers found and what became of it; burning rivers, dead zones, Minamata, PCBs, forever chemicals, poisoned towns, oil spills, and the lead, PFAS and plastics now in our blood — each with a plain verdict.

Chapter Ten — "El Niño, the Warming World, and the Straight Answer" **96**
The record-breaking El Niño of 2026-27 explained, and every climate question answered in turn: is it warming, is it us, is it the sun, is it the end of the world — with a table of verdicts.

Chapter Eleven — "From a Groaning Creation to a New Creation" **105**
A creation still groaning under the Curse, scripture's own promise of a coming new heavens and new earth, what that ending means for how a steward holds the present world — and what would change this study's mind.

Appendix — Weights and Verdicts **109**
Every argument in this study with its weight and what the other side fairly answers — including the claims earlier versions made and this one withdraws — and every verdict from Chapters Seven through Ten.

Sources & Notes **116**
Every citation in this study, gathered in one place and organized by chapter.

Scripture Index **132**
Every scripture quoted in this study, in canonical order, with the chapter and section where it appears.

Introduction

The Word That Was Not Silent

Before this study says one more word about mist, mountains, or the length of a day, it has to answer a more basic question, because everything that follows depends on the answer: what is this book, actually, and why should anything it says be trusted enough to build a climate study on?

That question deserves a real answer, not an assumption. Many readers picking up this study will be encountering, maybe for the first time, an approach that treats scripture's own account of the world's history as accurate — not ancient poetry to be filed alongside the myths of surrounding cultures, but a record whose accuracy can be tested, checked, and corroborated against the physical evidence the created world itself still carries. That approach has a name: creation science. It is not a separate religion competing with real science, and it is not a rejection of observation, measurement, or evidence. It is the discipline of examining the same rocks, the same fossils, the same starlight, the same DNA every other scientist examines — geology, biology, astronomy, genetics — starting from the working assumption that Genesis is telling the truth about a real, recent, six-day creation and a real, global Flood, and then asking what the evidence actually shows once that assumption is allowed a seat at the table. Where the evidence and the text line up — and this study will show, chapter by chapter, that they line up far more often than most readers have ever been told — creation science treats that agreement as exactly what it looks like: truth, corroborated. Not scripture needing science to rescue it, and not science needing scripture's permission to be trustworthy, but two honest witnesses describing the same real world, giving any reader willing to look a far better, far more complete picture of the landscape God actually made than either source offers alone.

That is the ground this study stands on, and it needs to be said plainly, without hedging: we trust God and His word — not the shifting traditions of men, and not the pseudo-science built, however confidently, outside the bounds of scripture and plain logic. Evolution. Billions of years of slow accident stacking on slow accident until a planet, and then a man, simply happened. These are not neutral, settled facts a reasonable person simply accepts the way he accepts that water is wet. They are a *competing account of origins* — one built on the working assumption that no Creator spoke, and that everything now here arrived by unguided process and unfathomable time instead. This study does not build on that foundation, and it is not going to pretend a neutrality it does not have. It builds on this ground: God spoke, what He said is true, and the physical world He made still carries the evidence of exactly what He said He did.

What this study is going to do, across every chapter that follows, is demonstrate something specific: God's original intent for the world He made, and the perfection of it before anything went wrong; the one, real, historical mistake a real man made, that broke that perfection; and the mercy and grace by which that same God is already at work undoing the damage, and has promised, in the end, to finish the job completely — a world brought back, fully, to the perfection it was always meant to carry. That is the shape of the whole study in miniature: very good, broken, and being restored. Everything from here forward is that story, told in more and more specific detail.

Weighing it: Method, not argument — states the ground this study stands on and bears no weight on any contested claim. It says plainly that the study starts from scripture's trustworthiness rather than

arriving at it. A reader who does not share that starting point can fairly say so; the study's aim is to show that the evidence fits the starting point, not to pretend it began without one.

No Excuse: What Creation Alone Already Tells Every Man

Here is where this study actually has to begin, and it begins somewhere most readers do not expect: not with the Bible in anyone's hand at all, but with a man who has never held one.

> **Romans 1:18** *For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; 1:19 Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: 1:21 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. 1:22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,*

Paul's claim here is direct, and it does not soften with distance from Sinai or from any prophet's voice. Simply by looking at what God made — the sky, the seasons, the sheer engineered precision of a created world running exactly as it was built to run — any man, anywhere, in any century, already has enough information to know a Creator exists, and that this Creator is powerful and eternal. Not everything about God. Not the gospel, not His name, not His plan of salvation. But enough — enough that verse twenty says plainly there is *no excuse* for looking at a world this ordered and concluding no one built it. The failure Paul describes here is not a failure of evidence. It is a failure of response: knowing, and not glorifying; seeing, and not being thankful; a heart that darkens, not because the light was too dim to see, but because it was refused.

Weighing it: Direct statement — Romans 1:18-22 says creation leaves every man without excuse. The opposing reading does not dispute what Paul says; it disputes whether design can be read from nature at all. That is a philosophical disagreement, not a textual one.

Before the Book, the Heavens

Scripture itself does not claim its written word was the first way God ever spoke. Genesis opens with the plainest possible claim about how everything came to exist at all:

> **Genesis 1:1** *In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.*

Not a slow accumulation of unguided chance across billions of years. The Big Bang, for all the mathematics wrapped around it, is still a model of an unobserved past — one account among the possible ones, resting on assumptions that cannot themselves be run again and checked. Scripture offers something the theory cannot: a direct claim, from God's own mouth, about what actually happened and who did it. Jesus, the Saviour of mankind, who by His own testimony always did the will of His Father, said this about His Father's own word:

> **John 17:17b** …thy word is truth.

Truth, in that verse, is not a synonym for "facts a man happens to have gathered." It is something sturdier than that: an absolute standard that does not shift with a new discovery, a new consensus, or a new century — because it did not come from a century in the first place. It came from God.

And yet — this is the turn a careful reader should feel here — God did not expect mankind to live by the knowledge of Himself available only in creation. That was real knowledge, enough to leave every man without excuse, as Romans one has already shown. But it was not everything. At first, before a single word of scripture was ever written down, His word was written in the heavens themselves.

> **Genesis 1:14** *And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years:*

From the fourth day of creation onward, the sun, moon, and stars were never merely decorative. God built them, by His own stated purpose, to function as signs — a fixed, readable, dependable calendar and message system, hung in place before there was a single human being alive to read it, and left running ever since. David says the same thing from the other direction — not what the lights were built to do, but what they are still doing, every day, to this hour:

> **Psalm 19:1** *To the chief Musician, A Psalm of David. The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. 19:2 Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. 19:3 There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard. 19:4 Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world. In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun,*

No nation has ever been outside the reach of this witness. No language has ever lacked it. Long before a single verse of Genesis was written down, put a man anywhere on earth, on any night, and the sky over his head was already declaring, wordlessly and without interruption, that Someone had made it.

Weighing it: Direct statement — Genesis 1:14 and Psalm 19 say the heavens were made as signs and still declare God's glory; this is the first appearance of claim H. Every reader grants the verses. What is open is how much *content* the heavens were meant to carry, which Chapter One §V weighs separately.

Then, the Written Word — and Why

A sky that speaks is not the same thing as a book a man can hold, read closely, and return to. God provided that too, and scripture is candid about why:

> **1 Timothy 2:4** *Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.*

Creation alone leaves a man without excuse for denying God exists. It does not, by itself, carry him to salvation. For that, God gave something more specific — a written record, produced the way scripture itself describes:

> **2 Timothy 3:16** *All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:*
>
> **2 Peter 1:21** *For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.*

Put simply: it is God's word. Men spoke it and wrote it down, but only as God revealed it to them to speak and write — not their own invented religious opinion, dressed up afterward as revelation.

Weighing it: Direct statement — scripture calls itself God-breathed and spoken by men moved by God. An opposing reader may doubt the claim; no reader can doubt that scripture makes it.

A God Who Cannot Lie, and Does Not Change

Everything this study is about to build rests on one more claim, and scripture states it without qualification:

> **Numbers 23:19** *God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: hath he said, and shall he not do it? or hath he spoken, and shall he not make it good?*

A God incapable of lying is a God whose word can be built on. And scripture goes further still — not only that He does not lie, but that His own character does not shift:

> **1 John 1:5** *This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.*
>
> **Malachi 3:6** *For I am the LORD, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.*
>
> **James 1:17** *Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.*

Good, always. The same, always. Which means the record He gave of what He did in the beginning is not a record that needs updating every time a new theory becomes fashionable. It was true when it was written, and it is true now.

Weighing it: Direct statement — Numbers 23:19, Malachi 3:6 and James 1:17 say God does not lie and does not change. Earlier versions cited Romans 12:2 here, a verse about the believer's renewed mind, not God's unchanging character; it has been replaced.

The Mistake, and the Mercy

Here, briefly, is where the whole story this study tells is actually going, stated in advance so no reader has to wait chapters to see the shape of it. One man's sin broke what had been made very good:

> **1 Corinthians 15:22** *For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.*

"Made alive" here is not merely surviving this present life a little longer. It is everlasting life, beyond it — and scripture is equally direct about where that life is found:

> **Acts 4:12** *Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.*

And the way to it is not complicated, not a ladder of good works climbed one rung at a time, and not even, strictly, a matter of cataloguing and confessing every sin. It is simpler than that, and scripture says so directly:

> **Romans 10:9** *That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10:10 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. 10:11 For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.*

"Ashamed" there carries the sense of *disappointed* — a promise that whoever trusts this specific claim will not find, in the end, that it failed to hold.

That is the full shape of what this study exists to show: a Creator who made a very good world and left no one without a witness to Himself, in the sky above every man's head and then in a book any man can

hold; a real, historical mistake that broke what He made; and a mercy already extended, and a grace already at work, to bring that broken perfection all the way back. From here, this study turns to what that Creator actually said about the world He made — starting, as scripture itself does, at the very beginning.

Weighing it: Direct statement — for claim R: one man's sin brought death, and salvation is by confessing Jesus as Lord and believing God raised him. Every verse quoted says so in its own words. Readers differ on how the promised restoration will unfold, not on whether scripture promises it.

The Case Against This Study, at Full Strength

Before this study argues anything, it owes the reader the strongest form of the case on the other side, stated the way its own best defenders would state it.

On the age of the earth. Nearly every geologist, physicist and astronomer working today holds that the earth is about 4.5 billion years old and the universe about 13.8 billion. Their case does not rest on one method. Many radiometric clocks, using different elements with different half-lives, agree with one another on the same rocks. Annual layers in ice cores, lake sediments and tree rings can be counted back tens of thousands of years. Light from distant galaxies has, on the ordinary reading, travelled for billions of years to reach us. On this view the young-earth position is not a rival science but a refusal of converging evidence.

On the reading of Genesis. Many Bible-believing scholars — not only secular critics — read the days of Genesis 1 as a literary framework, as long ages, or as days of God's work rather than calendar days, and point out that the sun is not made until the fourth day. Many hold that Romans 5 and 8 speak of human death and do not rule out animal death before Adam. Many read the Flood as a real but regional catastrophe, noting that "all the earth" elsewhere in scripture can mean the known land (Genesis 41:57).

On the rock record. Mainstream geology sees in the Grand Canyon not one event but many: ancient soils, burrows, footprints, mud cracks, raindrop marks, desert dunes and eroded surfaces, each needing time. Coal seams often sit on ancient soils with roots still in place. Soft tissue in dinosaur bone is explained by chemical cross-linking now tested in the laboratory. Buried impact craters, such as the one under Ames, Oklahoma, are read as strikes spread across hundreds of millions of years, some with signs of long pauses before they were buried.

On the present climate — from two directions. Earlier versions of this study stood with a skeptical case, and it deserves stating at its strongest: climate has always changed, as the Medieval Warm Period and the Little Ice Age show; the sun and ocean cycles such as El Niño drive large natural swings; climate models have been accused of running hot; and public alarm routinely outruns what the science itself says. From the other direction, many voices hold that warming is an existential threat — that it will make the earth uninhabitable or end human civilization — and that anything short of that alarm is denial. Chapter Ten tests both cases against the measurements and gives a plain answer to each.

This study disagrees with much of that case, and the chapters that follow say why. But a reader who has seen it stated fairly is better placed to judge whether this study answers it.

Weighing it: Opposing case, stated — bears no weight of its own; it is the standard the rest of the study must meet.

How to Read the Weighing Notes

Every section of this study ends with a short note in bold, headed **Weighing it.** It exists because a study that states a strong argument and a weak one in the same confident tone has not been honest with its reader, and because a reader is owed a plain statement of which is which rather than having to work it out unaided.

Each note says two things. First, how strong the section's argument is, on a five-step scale. **Direct statement** means scripture says it in so many words, and the only question is what the words mean. **Strong inference** means it follows closely from what scripture or the evidence says, and the alternative has to strain against it. **Reasonable inference** means it is the more natural reading, but an honest reader working carefully can take it otherwise. **Corroboration only** means it is consistent with this study's position and would be roughly as consistent with the opposite one — it may be stated, but it will not be leaned on. **Neutral** means it is commonly cited by one side or the other and settles nothing.

Second, and just as important, each note says *which way the section points*, and names the claim it bears on. Sections that argue nothing contested say so plainly — **Narrative**, **Method, not argument**, **Concession**, **Opposing case, stated**, or **Mixed, stated per point** — rather than being given a manufactured rating. Each chapter's short opening, which only introduces what follows, carries no note. Chapter Two-B is told as one continuous story, so its story carries a single note at its end, with a note inside it only where the story rests on a contested claim.

Chapters Seven through Ten work differently. Those chapters deal with the present world — the resources the Flood left, what men have done with them, what has been put into the air, the water, the land and our bodies, and what is happening to the climate. Those are not questions of how to read a disputed text or a contested layer of rock. They are questions of measured, recorded, and in many cases litigated or admitted fact, and a reader deserves a plain answer to each. So those chapters carry no weighing notes. Instead, each case ends with a bold **Verdict** — usually on the question *is this man-made?* — answered **Yes**, **No**, or, where the record is honestly mixed, **Partly**, with one sentence on what the answer rests on. Chapter Ten closes with every climate verdict in a single table, and Part Two of the Appendix gathers every verdict in the study.

This study argues ten claims, and they are worth having in one place before the first chapter begins:

	The claim	Argued in
Y	Creation took six ordinary days, and about six thousand years separate us from Eden	Ch. 1 opening and §I; Ch. 3
D	No animal died or preyed on another before Adam sinned	Ch. 1 §§II, III, XII
H	The heavens were made as signs and were meant to be read	Ch. 1 §§IV, V
P	The world before the Flood differed physically from ours — a mist instead of rain, gentler land, far longer lives	Ch. 1 §§VI, VII, XIII; Ch. 2-A §II
N	The "sons of God" of Genesis 6 were Seth's line, and the Nephilim human tyrants	Ch. 2-A §III
F	Noah's Flood was global and laid down much of the rock record, fast	Ch. 4; Ch. 5; Ch. 6 §VIII
K	Coal, oil, gas, fossils and the great sedimentary resources formed quickly, largely in the Flood	Ch. 2-A §IV; Ch. 6
S	Man was made steward of the earth, and the pollution of its air, water, land and people is man-made	Ch. 7; Chs. 8-9
C	The world has warmed, essentially all of it by man since the late 1800s, on top of natural cycles such as El Niño; it harms people, the poor most, but will not end the world God has promised to sustain	Ch. 10
R	Creation groans under the Curse and will be made new, not merely repaired	Ch. 2-A §I; Ch. 6 §VIII; Ch. 11

The claims are not equally strong, and the notes say so. **R** rests on direct statements of scripture. **Y** and **D** rest on the plain reading of the text, which serious readers contest. **P**, **F** and **K** rest on scientific models this study finds persuasive but which are disputed — some of them even among creation scientists. **S** and **C** are different in kind: they concern the measured record of the present world, and Chapters Seven through Ten answer them with plain verdicts rather than weighing notes. Earlier versions of this study held claim **C** the other way — that the human share of warming and its danger were overstated. Following the data, this version reverses that on the human share and withdraws the earlier estimates; the Appendix lists them as withdrawn so that they are not quietly put back.

The Appendix collects every argument in one table, with its weight, its direction, and what the opposing reading can fairly answer, and every verdict of Chapters Seven through Ten in a second — including the arguments earlier versions of this study made and this one withdraws. Chapter Eleven §V names the findings that would change this study's mind.

Weighing it: Method, not argument — bears no weight either way.

In Short

This study trusts scripture as God's word and reads Genesis as history. It argues ten claims, from a six-day creation to a promised new creation, and for the ancient past it tells you, section by section, how strong each argument is and what the other side fairly says. For the present world — pollution and the climate — it gives plain verdicts from the measured record: the pollution is man-made, most of the warming is man-made, and none of it will end the world God has promised to sustain.

Chapter One — “Very Good”

The Created World Before the Fall

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

Before there is a story to tell about a world going wrong, there is a longer, richer story to tell about a world made right — and it deserves more than a page.

This study calls itself “Climate Change,” and it will earn that name in full before it’s finished — with real chapters on the Flood, on ice cores, on the coal and oil beneath your feet, on the specific data debated in the news tonight. But climate, in the end, is only one thread in something much larger: the character of the Creator, the completeness of the world He made, and the corruption that entered it the day one man reached for one piece of fruit. To understand what changed, you first have to see — really see, in enough detail to feel it — what didn’t need to change at all. This chapter is that seeing. It is long because the world it describes was not small.

A Word Before We Begin: Why This Study Reads Genesis as History

This study needs to tell you, plainly and before anything else, where it stands and why — because a reader who has been taught that the earth is billions of years old, and that animals died for hundreds of millions of years before any human being existed, is going to run headlong into a wall within the first few pages of this chapter. That reader deserves to know now, not discover by accident three chapters in, exactly what this study believes and why, so the disagreement can be met honestly instead of dismissed as naivety.

This study reads Genesis 1 and 2 as a historical, sequential, plain account of six ordinary days, a real garden, a real first man and woman, and a created order in which no animal died, hunted, or decayed before Adam’s sin. Section I of this chapter lays out the “yom” argument from the Hebrew text itself, and Chapter Three of this study carries the rest of the chronological case in full — the genealogical math of Genesis 5 and 11, and the reasons this study does not treat mainstream radiometric dating as a neutral, assumption-free referee. What belongs here, up front, is the plainer question underneath all of that: *why* would a thoughtful reader in the twenty-first century even consider that the earth is young, when “everyone knows” it’s billions of years old?

Here is the honest answer, and it is a matter of documented history, not merely this study’s own opinion: the idea that the earth is millions or billions of years old is not ancient. It is not what the great majority of the church’s teachers held for its first seventeen or eighteen centuries — even those, like Augustine, who read the days of Genesis 1 in a non-literal way still counted the world’s age in thousands of years. It is not what the text of Genesis, read on its own terms without a prior commitment to deep time, would lead an unbiased reader to conclude. It is a specific, datable, named proposal, introduced into Western thought within the last two hundred and fifty years — and it is worth knowing exactly when, by whom, and why, because a claim’s *age* is not the same thing as its *truth*, and a claim that

displaced the long-prevailing reading deserves to have its own origin examined as carefully as anything else in this study.

The error, named and dated. In 1785, and more fully in his 1795 work *Theory of the Earth*, the Scottish naturalist James Hutton proposed that the geological features of the earth's surface could be explained entirely by slow, gradual, presently-observable processes — erosion, sedimentation, uplift — operating continuously over spans of time so vast that Hutton himself famously concluded the earth showed "no vestige of a beginning, no prospect of an end." This idea, that the present is the key to the past and that the same slow processes we see today have always operated at the same slow rate, is called *uniformitarianism*, and Hutton's proposal of it is the actual, documented birth of "millions of years" as a framework for reading the earth's history — not scripture, not ancient testimony, but one man's theoretical proposal, two hundred and thirty years old as of this writing.

Hutton's idea did not become the dominant framework on its own. That happened chiefly through Charles Lyell, whose three-volume *Principles of Geology* (1830-1833) systematized and popularized uniformitarianism so effectively that it became the working assumption of an entire generation of scientists. When a young Charles Darwin sailed on the *Beagle* in December 1831, he took the first volume with him — a gift from the ship's captain, Robert FitzRoy — and read it during the voyage itself, and later credited Lyell's framework of gradual, uniform change over immense time as essential to how he came to think about slow biological change over similarly immense time. The two ideas — an old earth shaped gradually, and life shaped gradually by the same kind of slow, uniform process — were born together, in the same intellectual generation, from the same handful of men, within living memory of the American Revolution. They were not, historically, independent developments: Darwin himself credited Lyell's deep time as the room his own theory needed.

This study is not going to pretend this is a settled matter beyond honest dispute — later chapters name the real scientific arguments on both sides fairly, including the genuinely unresolved questions even within young-earth scholarship itself (distant starlight, chiefly). But it is worth a reader knowing, before turning one more page, that "millions of years" is not what careful readers of Genesis concluded from the text for most of church history. It is a two-and-a-half-century-old proposal, born from a specific set of Enlightenment-era assumptions about how nature must always have worked, and this study declines to let that comparatively recent framework silently override an older, more direct reading of the text — not out of stubbornness, but because, per the Introduction above, this study starts from the conviction that scripture is the trustworthy, God-breathed word of a Creator who cannot lie, and any scientific model that requires reinterpreting scripture's plain historical claims to fit it is a model this study is willing to hold to a higher standard of proof, not a lower one.

So: this study follows the young-earth reading throughout — no animal death, no predation, no decay, before Adam's sin; six ordinary days; roughly six thousand years since Eden. That stance is named here, defended here, and carried consistently through every chapter that follows. Where serious, Bible-believing scholars read the same texts differently — and they do, honestly and in good faith, as this chapter will show at more than one point — that disagreement will be named plainly rather than hidden. But the ground this study stands on is stated now, not smuggled in later.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim Y: Genesis should be read as history, and deep time is a recent proposal. That Hutton and Lyell introduced the modern deep-time framework, and that most earlier Christian teachers counted the world's age in thousands of years, is documented history. That this weakens deep time is a **reasonable inference** only: a claim's age says nothing about its truth, and

the opposing reading fairly answers that geology reached its conclusions from the rocks, not from a wish to make room for Darwin.

I. An Ordered World, Not a Chaotic One

Genesis one does not open with a list. It opens with a sequence, and sequence is the first thing worth noticing, because it is not random.

Verse one: *"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth."* Verse two: the earth *"without form, and void,"* darkness on the face of the deep, and the Spirit of God moving on the face of the waters.[1] From that starting condition — formless, watery, dark — the six days build outward in a specific order: light, called Day, separated from darkness, called Night (Day One); a firmament dividing the waters above from the waters below (Day Two); dry land gathered out of the waters below it, and, the same day, vegetation — grass, herb, and fruit tree — springing up from that land (Day Three); sun, moon, and stars, given their function of governing day and night and marking seasons (Day Four); sea creatures and flying creatures (Day Five); land animals, and then man, made in God's own image (Day Six).[2]

Read the sequence again, slowly, and notice what it is not. It is not chaos organizing itself; it is not a heap of finished pieces dropped into the world all at once with no relationship to each other. It is a specific, deliberate progression — and it happens to be a progression that lines up, broadly and repeatedly, with categories a modern reader trained in biology or earth science would recognize as making functional sense. Vegetation — photosynthetic life, the base of every food chain that will ever exist — is established on Day Three, *before* any animal that will need to eat it exists at all. Sea and air life precede land life. The lights that regulate a functioning ecosystem's rhythms are set in place before the animals whose lives will run on those rhythms are made.[3] Answers in Genesis has written specifically on this observation — that the creation account's own internal order is not arbitrary but functionally coherent, plants preceding the animal life dependent on them, a detail costing the text nothing to get wrong if it were merely inventing an origin myth, and one it does not get wrong.[4]

This study is not going to overclaim what that observation proves. It is a real point, used by writers across a range of positions on how long each "day" lasted — including old-earth Christian writers who read this same sequence-alignment as support for long geological ages, a reading this study rejects on the grammatical grounds laid out next. What this study is willing to say plainly is narrower and sturdier: the *order* itself is not an accident of ancient storytelling, indifferent to how ecosystems actually function. It is the order a working world would need, laid down in the sequence a working world would need it in.

What a "day" actually is: the proof from the Hebrew, laid out to be seen

This is the point where many studies simply assert their conclusion and move on, or point the reader elsewhere to take the argument on faith. This one will not. The claim that each creation "day" in Genesis 1 is an ordinary, twenty-four-hour day — not a figurative age, not a poetic device, not an unspecified span of geological time — is not a claim this study is asking you to take on trust. It rests on a direct, visible, checkable feature of the Hebrew text itself, and it is worth slowing down to actually see it rather than being told about it.

The Hebrew word translated "day" throughout Genesis 1 is יוֹם (*yom*). Read the refrain that closes every single one of the six creation days, in the original word order:

> **Genesis 1:5** וַיְהִי־עֶרֶב וַיְהִי־בֹקֶר יוֹם אֶחָד *vay'hi erev vay'hi voker, yom echad* "And it was evening, and it was morning — day one."

Picture the phrase exactly as it is built, because the construction itself is the proof. Two nouns bracket the day: עֶרֶב (*erev*, "evening") and בֹּקֶר (*voker*, "morning") — the two halves of a single ordinary rotation, the same two words any Hebrew speaker, ancient or modern, uses for the actual close and actual start of an actual day. Then the noun יוֹם itself, paired directly with a number: אֶחָד (*echad*, "one"). Not "day of unspecified length." Not "an age" or "an era." *Evening. Morning. Day one.* The same construction repeats, with the number changing, at the close of every remaining day of the creation week:

> **Genesis 1:8** *vay'hi erev vay'hi voker, yom sheni* — "and it was evening, and it was morning, day **two** [שֵׁנִי]." **Genesis 1:13** *...yom shlishi* — day **three** [שְׁלִישִׁי]. **Genesis 1:19** *...yom revi'i* — day **four** [רְבִיעִי]. **Genesis 1:23** *...yom chamishi* — day **five** [חֲמִישִׁי]. **Genesis 1:31** *...yom hashishi* — day **six** [הַשִּׁשִּׁי], with the definite article added, "the sixth day," marking the close of the whole work.

Now, the grammatical rule that turns this observation into a proof rather than a curiosity. The word *yom* appears well over a hundred times elsewhere in the Old Testament with a number attached, or bounded by "evening" and "morning." In plain historical narrative those constructions mark an ordinary day, and translators render them that way — because that is what the construction means in Hebrew, the same way "three o'clock" means a specific hour in English and not a vague stretch of afternoon. The few passages usually raised against the rule — Hosea 6:2's "after two days... in the third day," or Zechariah 14:7's "one day... at evening time" — are prophecy rather than narrative, and even there most commentators still hear a day-unit behind the figure.[5] Genesis 1 does not merely use one of those two markers. It uses *both*, *together*, *six times in a row* — evening-and-morning bookending a numbered day — the single most emphatic way Biblical Hebrew has of saying "this was one ordinary rotation of light and dark," repeated with a drumbeat regularity no other passage in the entire Hebrew Bible matches.

Scripture itself draws the same conclusion explicitly, tying the creation week directly to the ordinary seven-day week Israel was commanded to keep — not as an analogy, but as the stated *reason* for the commandment:

> **Exodus 20:11** *For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.*

If the six days of creation were vast, unspecified ages rather than ordinary days, this commandment collapses into nonsense — a working Israelite farmer or craftsman resting one ordinary day in seven because God once rested for one "age" in a sequence of "ages" is not an argument; it is a category error the text itself never makes. The Fourth Commandment only makes sense, grammatically and logically, if the days it names — on both sides of the comparison — are the same kind of day.

This is what "show the proof, don't just point to it" looks like: the Hebrew text itself, read in its own word order, makes the ordinary-day case visually, before a single outside argument is added to it. This study rests its reading of Genesis 1 on that foundation — a foundation examined further, alongside the genealogical chronology it supports, in Chapter Three.

This is where the whole chapter starts, because everything that follows — the naming of animals, the mist, the stars, the lifespans — is the story of what that finished, ordered, functioning world, made in six

such days, actually contained, described in the kind of detail that rewards slowing down rather than skimming past.

Weighing it: Mixed, stated per point — the order of creation is corroboration only; the six ordinary days are a strong inference for claim Y. That Genesis 1 puts plants before the animals that eat them is **corroboration only**: old-earth readers use the same order to support long ages. That *yom* with a number and "evening and morning" marks an ordinary day is a **strong inference** from Hebrew usage in narrative, reinforced by Exodus 20:11's direct tie to the working week. The opposing reading fairly answers that Genesis 1 is a unique, highly patterned text, that the sun is not made until day four, and that its genre may not be plain narrative. Earlier versions said *every* numbered use of *yom* in the Old Testament means an ordinary day "without exception"; that overstated the case and has been narrowed to plain narrative.

II. "Very Good" — A Verdict That Does Not Fit on a Simple Scale

The sixth day ends with a verdict, and it is worth hearing again, because this chapter is going to spend the rest of itself proving the verdict was earned. Genesis one, verse thirty-one:

> *"And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good."*

Six times earlier in the same chapter — light, land and seas, vegetation, sun and moon and stars, sea and air creatures, land animals — the text pronounces something *good*.[6] Only once, at the very end, after everything is assembled and man himself is placed into the finished system, does the assessment step up: not good, *very* good.

Sit with what that step-up actually is, in the language it was originally spoken in, because in English "very good" reads like a grade — somewhere comfortably between "fair" and "excellent," the kind of phrase a teacher writes on a paper that did well but not perfectly. That reading cannot be right, and it is worth showing exactly why, from the Hebrew itself, rather than simply asserting that it falls short.

Who is speaking, and in what language. This is אֱלֹהִים (*Elohim*) — God, using the majestic, plural-form name for Himself that runs through the whole creation account — rendering His own verdict on His own completed work, in Hebrew, whose grammar carries shades of meaning a translation cannot always carry across. This is not a human critic grading an exam on a curve. It is the Creator Himself, examining the entirety of what He had just spoken into being, and pronouncing a verdict on it.

The words themselves. The Hebrew is טוֹב מְאֹד (*tov me'od*). טוֹב (*tov*) is the same word used all six earlier times in the chapter — "good." מְאֹד (*me'od*) is not a second adjective sitting alongside it, the way "very" modifies "good" as two separate ideas in English. It is an intensifying adverb, and its normal grammatical function in Biblical Hebrew is to push the word it modifies to its furthest, most complete extent — not "somewhat more good," but "good, carried all the way out." The same word appears, for comparison, in the great commandment: love the LORD your God *"with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might"* — that last word, "might," is this same *me'od*, used as a noun there rather than an adverb, but carrying the identical sense of total, undivided, maximal extent.[7] *Me'od* does not mean "a bit more." It means the whole of something, held back not at all.

Why the English scale is the wrong scale entirely. Here is the deeper problem this section needs to name plainly: "good" and "very good," read as two points on a single sliding human scale from poor to excellent, cannot be what Elohim means, because that scale assumes the possibility of failure or partial

success — the very thing a perfect Creator's finished, examined work cannot contain. When scripture calls God Himself good — *"O give thanks unto the LORD; for he is good"* (Psalm 107:1, and repeated as a refrain across Psalms 100, 106, 118, and 136) — it is not grading Him against a possible alternative in which He might have been less good. It is describing what He inherently, unchangeably is. *Tov*, applied to God's own character, is not scalar; it is categorical — He simply *is* that, completely, with no gradient beneath Him. When the same word, now intensified by *me'od* to its fullest possible extent, is applied to the finished creation on day six, the text is not awarding the world a slightly higher test score than the individual "good" pronouncements of days one through five. It is declaring the completed system to be a whole, functioning, *complete* reflection of the goodness of the God who made it — every part fitted to every other part, nothing missing, nothing in excess, nothing flawed, the created order examined in its totality and found to correspond, as fully as a finite, physical world can, to the unqualified goodness of its infinite Maker.

That is what "very good" is actually claiming, read in the words it was actually spoken in — not a high mark on a human report card, but Elohim's own declaration that the completed world matched, as completely as a creation can match its Creator, His own inherent, non-scalar goodness.

Sit with what that verdict has to rule out. A system already running, on its opening morning, on predation, disease, extinction, and decay — the same mechanisms holding our own ecosystem together now — is not merely a slightly lower score than "very good, examined and confirmed complete." It is a flat contradiction of it. The next section is where the text itself defends that reading in detail, rather than merely asserting it.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim D: "very good" rules out a world already running on death. The meaning of *tov me'od* as fullest goodness is a **direct statement** about the words. That it excludes animal death and predation is a **reasonable inference**: an opposing reader can grant the words and still hold that "very good" means fit for its purpose, not free of all animal death.

III. No Death, No Predation

Genesis one, twenty-nine and thirty — the diet God assigns, at creation, to man and to every land animal:

> *"And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed… to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth… I have given every green herb for meat."*

No exception clause. No carve-out for creatures built to hunt. Every land animal, every bird, every creeping thing — plants, full stop, at the moment of creation.[8]

Romans five, twelve: *"by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin."* Death enters, at a specific point, through a specific cause — not a feature the world was already running on. Romans eight, twenty through twenty-two, widens the lens past humanity: the whole creation *"was made subject to vanity… groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now."* First Corinthians fifteen, twenty-one, twenty-two, and twenty-six: death as *"the last enemy"* — an enemy, not an original employee.[9] Put together with the diet of Genesis one, the picture holds: in the world Genesis one describes, animals did not die, and animals did not kill other animals to live.

This study says plainly, as it has already said above, that this is not the only reading held by serious, Bible-believing scholars. Reasons to Believe, an old-earth creationist ministry, has published material directly arguing the opposite position — that Romans and Corinthians address human and spiritual death specifically, and that vertebrate animal death for hundreds of millions of years before Adam is fully compatible with scripture.[10] That disagreement is real, it is held by serious people, and it is named here rather than hidden. But per the stance already defended at this chapter's opening — Genesis read as history, on grounds already laid out from the Hebrew text itself and the documented, comparatively recent origin of the deep-time framework — this study follows the young-earth reading throughout: no animal death, no predation, before the Fall.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim D: no animal died or preyed before the Fall. Genesis 1:29-30 gives plants as food to man and beast — a **direct statement**. That it describes the whole of what animals ate, and that Romans 5:12, 8:20-22 and 1 Corinthians 15 extend death's entry to animals, is a **reasonable inference**. Old-earth readers such as Reasons to Believe fairly answer that the diet verses may describe provision, not prohibition, and that Paul's subject is human death. The study names that reading and follows the other.

IV. Sun, Moon, Stars, and the Birth of Time Itself

Return to the fourth day, and read it in full. Genesis one, fourteen through nineteen:

> *"And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also."*

Notice, first, what the text is careful *not* to say. Every surrounding ancient Near Eastern culture — Egypt, Babylon, Canaan — gave the sun and moon proper names and worshiped them as gods in their own right: Ra, Shamash, Sin. Genesis 1 does something pointedly different. It never once names the sun or moon by name in this account. It calls them *"the greater light"* and *"the lesser light"* — functional descriptions, not names, and certainly not titles of deity. Hebrew has perfectly good, ordinary words for sun (*shemesh*, שֶׁמֶשׁ) and moon (*yareach*, יָרֵחַ), and the text simply declines to use either one here, reaching instead for a description that reduces the two objects an entire ancient world worshiped down to what they actually are: light-bearing objects, made, placed, and given a job, by a Creator who alone is worthy of worship. This is not incidental. It is a quiet, deliberate polemic — the created order's grandest visible objects, demoted from deity to servant, in the very account that introduces them.[11]

Four purposes, stated directly

Notice, second, what is actually being installed here, and notice that it is installed *for a purpose the text states directly*, in a list of four: *"for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years."* Each of the four deserves to be taken on its own.

Signs (Hebrew *otot*, אֹתוֹת). A sign points beyond itself to something else — a marker, a communicated meaning. The sun, moon, and stars are given, from their very first mention, a *semiotic* function: they are not only physical light sources, they are instruments meant to be *read*. This is the foundation Section V of this chapter builds on directly.

Seasons (Hebrew *mo'edim*, מוֹעֲדִים) — a word that deserves special attention, because its range in Hebrew is wider than the English "seasons" suggests. *Mo'edim* means, more precisely, *appointed times* — the same word later used throughout Leviticus 23 for Israel's sacred festival calendar itself: Passover, Pentecost, Tabernacles, all called *mo'edim*, "appointed times," in that very chapter. The sun and moon, on day four, are already being given the job of marking out not merely "spring" and "winter" in a loose agricultural sense, but the very rhythm of appointed, sacred time that Israel's whole worship calendar would one day be built on — centuries before Sinai, the instrument for keeping that future calendar was already being installed in the sky.

Days — the ordinary rotation this chapter has already proven, from the Hebrew text itself, to be a real twenty-four-hour unit; day four gives that same unit its visible marker and regulator, the sun's own movement across the sky.

Years — the longer solar cycle, the basis of every calendar system every human civilization has ever devised, whether measured by the sun's path (a solar year) or reconciled against the moon's own faster cycle (a lunar or lunisolar year, the kind ancient Israel itself used, intercalating an extra month periodically to keep the *mo'edim* aligned to the correct season).

An instrument, not a guess

Every calendar every human civilization has ever built — lunar, solar, agricultural, liturgical — is, on this reading, simply a human being reading an instrument God installed for exactly that job. Scripture reaffirms the reliability of that instrument explicitly on the other side of the Flood, in God's own covenant words to Noah:

> **Genesis 8:22** *While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.*

Whatever else changed at the Flood — and later chapters of this study will show that a great deal changed — this rhythm, established on day four, is the one thing God specifically promises will not. The same promise is echoed centuries later through Jeremiah, in language that treats the sun and moon's fixed ordinances as proof of God's own covenant faithfulness:

> **Jeremiah 33:20** *Thus saith the LORD; If ye can break my covenant of the day, and my covenant of the night, that there should not be day and night in their season; Then may also my covenant be broken with David my servant…*

The day-four ordinance is used, many centuries later, as the *benchmark of unbreakability itself* — God's covenant with David is only as breakable as the sun rising on schedule.

A precision worth noticing scientifically, not merely poetically

This is also a place where the created order's own physical precision is worth naming honestly, and creation-science writers have done exactly that: the solar year (roughly 365.24 days) and the lunar month (roughly 29.53 days) are not loosely approximate cycles — they are precise enough, and stable enough over millennia, that ancient civilizations with no modern instruments were able to build accurate calendars, track the cycles by which eclipses recur, and orient massive architecture (Stonehenge, the Great Pyramid's near-exact cardinal alignment) to solstice and equinox points using nothing but sustained, careful observation. Creation-science sources point to that same astronomical stability — the sun and moon behaving, across all of recorded history, exactly as reliably as Genesis 8:22

and Jeremiah 33:20 describe them — as itself a form of corroborating evidence: a designed system, running exactly as its Designer said it would, rather than a chaotic system that merely happens, by chance, to be predictable enough for a Bronze Age astronomer to set a calendar by.[12]

What this means for the world this chapter is describing

Picture what this means for the world this chapter is describing: a family whose entire working life — when to plant, when to expect the rains, when to harvest, when to rest, when to gather for worship — was governed by a sky that had been built, deliberately, on the fourth day of the world's existence, to tell them exactly that. Not superstition. Not guesswork passed down from centuries of trial and error. An instrument, installed on day four, doing precisely the job it was made to do — the same instrument every calendar on earth still reads today, whether or not the reader knows Whose hand installed it.

Weighing it: Direct statement — for claim H: the lights were made "for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years." The four purposes are stated outright, and *mo'edim*'s later use for Israel's feasts is a direct feature of the Hebrew. That the sky's stability is evidence of design is **corroboration only**: it is as consistent with a stable physical system on any account of origins.

V. The Word of God Written in the Heavens

This is the section that needed the most care to get right, and it deserves the space to be handled honestly — both the direct scriptural ground it stands on, and the tradition built on top of that ground, kept clearly distinguished from each other, because collapsing the two together would misrepresent both.

What scripture states directly. Psalm nineteen, verses one through four:

> *"The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard. Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world."*

Notice the vocabulary the psalmist reaches for. Not merely beauty — *speech*. *Knowledge*. *Voice*. *Words*, gone out "through all the earth," "to the end of the world." Whatever the heavens are doing, on the psalmist's own description, they are *communicating* — a message with a reach the psalmist explicitly says is universal, heard by every language, everywhere.[13]

Job, chapter thirty-eight, verses thirty-one through thirty-three, sharpens this further. God himself, speaking directly to Job out of the whirlwind, names specific constellations by name, and asks whether Job can govern them:

> *"Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades, or loose the bands of Orion? Canst thou bring forth Mazzaroth in his season? or canst thou guide Arcturus with his sons?"*

"Mazzaroth" — often understood as referring to the band of constellations along the sun's apparent yearly path, the same band later cultures would call the zodiac — is named here as something with its own "season," implying a fixed, ordered, meaningful arrangement God himself set and governs, known well enough by Job's own time to be referenced without further explanation.[14] The word appears only here, and its meaning is not certain: some scholars take it as a single constellation or star group rather

than the whole band, and mainstream historians trace the twelve-sign zodiac itself to Babylonian astronomy of the first millennium B.C. These are real, direct texts. Scripture itself treats the arrangement and naming of the stars as deliberate and as communicating something — not as random points of light a later culture happened to draw pictures between.

The tradition built on that ground — now checked directly against the primary source. A specific, long-standing line of biblical scholarship argues that the twelve constellations of the Mazzaroth, in their original form, told a single, ordered story: the coming of a redeemer, His conflict with a great enemy, and His ultimate, crowned victory. Most fully associated with E. W. Bullinger's 1893 work *The Witness of the Stars* — read here directly from its full public-domain text rather than summarized secondhand — the tradition traces twelve signs, each accompanied by three smaller supporting figures Bullinger calls "decans," arranged into three groups of four, telling the story in three movements.[15] Laid out in full, as Bullinger himself presents it:

Book One — The Redeemer, First Coming

Sign	Decans	The story told
Virgo, the Virgin	Coma (the woman and child), Centaurus (the centaur), Boötes (the coming one)	The promised seed of the woman
Libra, the Scales	Crux (the cross), Lupus (the victim), Corona (the crown)	The price that was owed, balanced by the price that covers it
Scorpio, the Scorpion	Serpens (the serpent), Ophiuchus (the serpent-holder), Hercules (the mighty one)	The Redeemer's conflict with the enemy, trodden underfoot
Sagittarius, the Archer	Lyra (the harp), Ara (the altar), Draco (the dragon)	The two-natured conqueror, going forth conquering and to conquer

Book Two — The Redeemed

Sign	Decans	The story told
Capricornus, the Sea-Goat	Sagitta (the arrow), Aquila (the eagle), Delphinus (the dolphin)	The goat of atonement, slain for the redeemed
Aquarius, the Water-Bearer	Piscis Australis (the southern fish), Pegasus (the winged horse), Cygnus (the swan)	Living waters poured out for the redeemed
Pisces, the Fishes	(the connecting Band), Andromeda (the chained woman), Cepheus (the enthroned king)	The redeemed, blessed though bound
Aries, the Ram	Cassiopeia (the enthroned woman), Cetus (the sea monster), Perseus (the breaker)	The lamb that was slain, prepared for the victory

Book Three — The Redeemer, Second Coming

Sign	Decans	The story told
Taurus, the Bull	Orion (the coming prince), Eridanus (the river of judgment), Auriga (the shepherd)	The Messiah, coming to rule
Gemini, the Twins	Lepus (the enemy trodden down), Canis Major/Sirius (the prince), Canis Minor/Procyon (the exalted redeemer)	The twofold nature of the coming King
Cancer, the Crab	Ursa Minor, Ursa Major (the sheepfolds), Argo (the ship, bringing the redeemed home)	The possessions of the King, held fast and brought home
Leo, the Lion	Hydra (the old serpent), Crater (the cup of wrath), Corvus (the raven, devourer)	The Lion of the tribe of Judah, roused at last for the rending of the enemy

Read across all twelve in order — Virgo's virgin-born seed, through conflict and atonement and blessing, to Leo's lion crowned in final victory — the tradition presents this as one continuous account, given originally, on this reading, to Adam or to Seth's line soon after, deliberately encoded in a form durable enough to survive without writing: fixed permanently overhead, needing only to be taught, generation to generation, long before Moses ever set a word of it down on a scroll. Only later, on this reading, was the same picture-set stripped of its original meaning and twisted by pagan cultures into the fortune-telling zodiac of astrology.

This is worth being fully honest about, in both directions. This is a real, citable, century-and-a-half-old tradition of conservative biblical scholarship, now checked directly against Bullinger's own primary text rather than described secondhand, and it rests on real texts — Psalm 19 and Job 38 — that do describe the heavens as genuinely communicative. It is also, at the same time, **not** a direct scriptural statement that Adam personally originated this specific twelve-part reading, or that patriarchs specifically walked their children out before every sunrise to be taught by it constellation by constellation. That reconstruction is the tradition's own, built outward from the two direct texts — valued, named honestly, never dressed up as scripture's own explicit claim.[16]

A distinction this chapter has to draw carefully, for doctrinal honesty. Scripture is not uniformly warm toward "reading the stars," and this deserves to be seen directly rather than taken on this study's word for it:

> **Deuteronomy 4:19** *And lest thou lift up thine eyes unto heaven, and when thou seest the sun, and the moon, and the stars, even all the host of heaven, shouldest be driven to worship them, and serve them, which the LORD thy God hath divided unto all nations under the whole heaven.*
>
> **Isaiah 47:13-14** *Thou art wearied in the multitude of thy counsels. Let now the astrologers, the stargazers, the monthly prognosticators, stand up, and save thee from these things that shall come upon thee. Behold, they shall be as stubble; the fire shall burn them; they shall not deliver themselves from the power of the flame.*
>
> **Jeremiah 10:2** *Thus saith the LORD, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them.*

Deuteronomy warns Israel directly against being drawn to worship the sun, moon, and stars. Isaiah mocks Babylon's astrologers and star-gazers as powerless to save even themselves. Jeremiah warns

God's people not to be dismayed at "the signs of heaven" the way the surrounding nations are.[17] The tradition this section describes draws the same line scripture itself draws, and this chapter draws it here just as plainly: the *original testimony* of the heavens — God's own handiwork, declaring His glory, and, on this reading, once carrying His redemptive message — is one thing. The *corrupted practice* of astrology — treating the stars as controlling fate, or as a tool for divination — is something scripture condemns repeatedly and without qualification, and something this chapter is not describing, endorsing, or recommending in any form.

Picture it, then, the way the tradition itself describes it. A family in the world this chapter is painting, generations before writing as we know it existed, rising in the dark hours before dawn — the one time of day the full night sky is still visible against a lightening horizon — walking out past the edge of a settlement, a father or grandfather pointing upward, naming a constellation, and telling, patiently, one more piece of a single unbroken story: a virgin, a promised seed, a great struggle, a serpent's head under a heel, and, far across the sky, a lion crowned in victory. Not superstition. Not divination. A catechism, fixed permanently overhead, needing no scroll to survive, because the sky itself would not forget it — until, generations later, the meaning was lost and the pictures alone remained, read by cultures that no longer knew what they had once been told.

Weighing it: Mixed, stated per point — for claim H: the heavens communicate (direct statement), but the Bullinger "gospel in the stars" is corroboration only. Psalm 19 and Job 38 say the heavens speak and that God set the Mazzaroth in its season — **direct statements**. That the twelve constellations once told the story of redemption, taught from Adam's day, is a tradition built outward from those texts and is held here as **corroboration only**. The opposing reading fairly answers that the word *Mazzaroth* is uncertain, that the zodiac as we know it is traced by historians to Babylon, and that the "decans" and their meanings come from later sources, not from scripture.

VI. The Mist That Watered the Whole Earth — and the Fountains of the Deep

Genesis two, verses five and six, describe an entire hydrological order almost every telling of the creation account compresses into a single throwaway sentence — and it deserves better than that, because it is one of the clearest pictures the text gives of how different this world's basic physical systems were from the ones running today, and because it sets up two of the largest, most consequential physical questions this whole study has to answer.

> *"For the LORD God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground. But there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground."*

Not merely "it hadn't rained yet that particular morning." An entire system: water rising *up* out of the ground itself, spreading, watering *"the whole face of the ground,"* apparently without the violence and the unevenness a rain-driven weather system produces.[18] Picture what that means: no drought, because watering didn't depend on storm systems forming unevenly across a landscape; no flash floods scouring valleys, because there was no concentrated downpour to scour with; none of the violent pressure differentials that drive hurricane-force winds today. A mist, rising gently, watering everything evenly.

A caution belongs here: for decades, many young-earth writers explained this system, and the long antediluvian lifespans covered later in this chapter, through a "vapor canopy" — a shell of water vapor surrounding the pre-Flood earth. It is a tidy explanation. It is also one Answers in Genesis's own current

position explicitly rejects: a canopy large enough to supply the Flood's forty days of rain would trap enough heat to boil the atmosphere and oceans before the Flood ever began, and the model requires suspending the ordinary water cycle for over 1,600 years.[19] AiG's counsel, in substance, is worth repeating here as a model of the honesty this whole study is trying to practice: hold firmly to what the Bible says, and loosely to the scientific models built to explain it. This chapter holds the same line: Genesis two, five and six, is a direct, reliable statement about *what* happened. *How*, exactly, remains genuinely open.

A system that outlasted Eden — and how it may have fed unbelief

The mist did not water Eden alone, for a single generation, and then stop. Genesis two's description is of the standing hydrological order for the entire pre-Flood world — the same "no rain" system — on this study's reading, though Genesis 2:5 itself speaks only of the time before man was made — running for the roughly sixteen or seventeen centuries between Adam's creation and the year Noah entered the ark. That detail matters more than it first appears to, because of what Peter says, centuries later, about the specific character of pre-Flood unbelief:

> **2 Peter 3:3-6** *Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.*

Peter's own point is about end-times scoffers, but the mechanism he describes — people confidently assuming that because a given physical pattern has always held within living memory, it will simply go on holding, *"all things continue as they were from the beginning"* — is a mechanism this chapter can reasonably picture operating in the pre-Flood world itself, not only in ours. A civilization that had never once seen it rain, generation after generation, for over a millennium, watered instead by a mist that rose gently and evenly every day without fail, is a civilization with every ordinary, experience-based reason to find Noah's specific warning — of water falling catastrophically *from above*, in a form their world's entire hydrological history gave them no precedent for — not merely unwelcome, but genuinely, experientially implausible. This study offers that connection as a reasonable inference from the described physical conditions, not a separate direct statement of scripture, but it is a coherent, textually-grounded explanation for something otherwise strange: that an entire world could watch a man build an enormous ship for decades, warning of a judgment by water, and apparently not one household outside his own believed him enough to act.[20]

The fountains of the great deep: what they were, and where the water went

The other question this chapter owes the reader a real answer to, rather than a wave in the Flood's general direction, is mechanical: when judgment finally came, where did the water actually come from, how deep did it actually need to be, and — just as important, and just as rarely asked — where did it go afterward?

Genesis seven, verse eleven, names two distinct sources for the Flood, not one:

> *"…the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened."*

"The windows of heaven" is the rain — forty days and nights of it, per verse twelve. But it is named second, and creation-science readers of this verse have long noted that the water volume implied by rain alone, even sustained at an extraordinary rate for forty days, is very unlikely to account for a global Flood on its own. The first-named source — *"the fountains of the great deep, broken up"* — is doing the heavier lifting, and it deserves to be investigated on its own terms rather than left as an unexplained phrase.

The Hebrew behind *"broken up"* is נִבְקְעוּ (*nivke'u*), from a root meaning to split, cleave, or burst open violently — the same verb family used elsewhere in scripture for the sea splitting at the Exodus (Exodus 14:21) and for the earth splitting open to swallow Korah (Numbers 16:31-32). This is not gentle seepage. It describes a sudden, violent, structural rupture — something underground *breaking open*, releasing what had been contained.

The creation-science model most directly engaging this verse, catastrophic plate tectonics, proposes exactly this kind of event on a planetary scale: the pre-Flood earth's crust, on this model, contained vast subterranean chambers and networks of water beneath and within the earth's rock layers. A triggering event — proposed as runaway subduction, in which cooler, denser oceanic crust began sinking into the earth's mantle faster and faster, dragging the rest of the ocean floor with it — tore open the boundary between those subterranean waters and the surface in a catastrophic chain reaction, simultaneously releasing enormous volumes of water and pressure-driven steam upward (plausibly the mechanical source of the sustained, intense rainfall described in the same verse) while violently reshaping the ocean floor and continental margins in a matter of months rather than ages.[21]

Why the flood did not need to be miles deep over today's mountains. This is the honest, direct answer to a question a careful reader is right to ask: if Everest stands nearly twenty-nine thousand feet tall today, wouldn't a global Flood have needed to be that deep, everywhere, which seems physically extreme even for a miracle? The answer this study gives, consistent with the reading of Psalm 104 set out in Section VII below, is that it would not have needed to be — because the world the Flood covered was not the world we live on now. If the pre-Flood earth's topography was substantially flatter — no continental-scale mountain ranges thrust up yet by the very tectonic violence the Flood itself unleashed — then a global Flood covering "all the high hills, that were under the whole heaven" (Genesis 7:19) is describing a genuinely global event without requiring a water column that would, on today's much more dramatic terrain, seem almost impossible to credit.

Where the water went afterward. This is the piece most popular tellings of the Flood skip entirely, and it deserves a direct answer. Genesis eight, verse three, states plainly that the waters *"returned from off the earth continually"* — and Psalm 104, in the passage Answers in Genesis itself reads as describing this very recessional stage of the Flood rather than the original creation week, states the mechanism directly:

> **Psalm 104:6-9** *Thou coveredst it with the deep as with a garment: the waters stood above the mountains. At thy rebuke they fled; at the voice of thy thunder they hasted away. They go up by the mountains; they go down by the valleys unto the place which thou hast founded for them. Thou hast set a bound that they may not pass over; that they turn not again to cover the earth.*

Answers in Genesis has argued directly, from the psalm's own grammar and its allusion to the Genesis 9:11 rainbow covenant (a promise God never made at the close of the third creation day, but did make explicitly after the Flood), that this passage describes tectonic movement during the Flood's own recessional stage — mountains rising, ocean basins sinking, in the same catastrophic tectonic episode

that opened the fountains of the deep in the first place.[22] On this reading, the water did not vanish or get destroyed. It went where the newly-deepened ocean basins now had room for it, as continental crust that had been relatively flat was thrust upward into new mountain ranges and the ocean floor was correspondingly driven downward — the same rising-and-sinking event Psalm 104 describes in poetic but physically specific language. Today's oceans, on this model, are deep enough — by a wide margin — to cover the entire globe if the earth's surface were smoothed flat, which is precisely why a world with less dramatic relief than today's could be entirely submerged by a flood that, once the mountains rose and the ocean basins deepened in its aftermath, drained away into basins now more than large enough to hold it, never to cover the whole earth again, exactly as the covenant in Genesis 9 and the psalm above both promise.

This remains, honestly, more mechanically involved than the direct, single-verse statements elsewhere in this chapter, and Chapter Four of this study — treating the Flood directly rather than in preview — is where the fuller case, sourced in full, belongs. What belongs here is the plain acknowledgment that this study has looked at the question rather than skipped past it: a real Hebrew verb describing real subterranean rupture, a real proposed mechanism tying that rupture to the same tectonic event that reshaped the earth's mountains and ocean basins, and a real scriptural passage describing exactly where the water went once the judgment had finished its work.

Weighing it: Mixed, stated per point — for claim P: the mist is a direct statement for Eden; its lasting until the Flood, and its role in unbelief, are reasonable inferences; the plate-tectonic mechanism is a working model. Genesis 2:5-6 states that no rain had yet fallen and a mist watered the ground. That the pattern held for sixteen centuries is inferred, not stated, and an opposing reader can fairly read Genesis 2:5 as describing only the days before man was made. The fountains of the deep "broken up" is a direct statement about violent rupture; catastrophic plate tectonics as its cause is a model, disputed even among creation geologists, and is weighed in Chapter Four.

VII. A World Without Mountains, and Without Their Weather

One more physical detail belongs alongside the mist and the fountains of the deep, because it completes the picture. The young-earth flood-geology model this study draws on in full in Chapter Four holds that most of the earth's great mountain ranges are not ancient features of a world running for hundreds of millions of years, but the product of catastrophic tectonic uplift during and immediately after the Flood — the very event Section VI has just described. Psalm 104, verses six through nine, quoted in full above, is read by Answers in Genesis not as poetic praise describing the third day of creation week, but as a direct, historically-anchored description of that post-Flood tectonic recession — mountains rising, valleys sinking, into the specific places God appointed for them, under a covenant bound to the same rainbow promise of Genesis 9:11.[23]

If that reading holds — and this study holds it as a reasonable inference, following Answers in Genesis's published reading, not as a direct statement of scripture — the world this chapter has described had a gentler topography than ours: none of the great ranges that today wring moisture violently out of passing air, drive storm tracks into their worst patterns, or create the rain-shadow deserts found on the leeward side of nearly every major range on earth. It fits, consistently, with the mist, with the "very good" verdict, and with everything else this chapter has described so far: a world engineered for gentleness, not extremity — a gentleness the very Flood that ended it would also, permanently, undo.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim P: the pre-Flood world had gentler relief, following Answers in Genesis's reading of Psalm 104:6-9. Many commentators, including some young-earth writers, read Psalm 104:6-9 as describing the third day of creation rather than the Flood. Earlier versions called this reading "no longer an unresolved inference" but a "directly-sourced conclusion"; a source's conclusion is still an inference, and the note has been corrected.

VIII. Adam, the First Namer

Genesis two, nineteen and twenty:

> *"And out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought them unto Adam to see what he would call them: and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that was the name thereof. And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field."*

This is not a child's game of assigning random sounds. The text describes a genuine act of observation and classification — Adam examining each created kind closely enough to give it a name that, in the text's own words, *becomes* that creature's actual, lasting name.[24] Functionally, this is the first recorded act of biological taxonomy in human history — the same underlying task modern classification is still doing, whether in the kingdom-phylum-class-order-family-genus-species system, or in the creation-science concept of the "created kind," or *baramin*, covered fully later in this chapter: organizing a living world into named, recognizable categories, grounded in real observed distinctions.

Picture the scale of what's being described. Not a handful of familiar farm animals — *every* beast of the field, *every* fowl of the air, brought before one man, each one observed closely enough to be named accurately and permanently. This implies a working knowledge of the animal kingdom in its full pre-Fall diversity that no human being since has ever possessed in the same way — an entire zoological catalog, held in one mind, built in what the text frames as a single, unhurried encounter.

How much further Adam's naming role extended deserves honest handling rather than either dismissal or overclaiming. The text specifically names *cattle*, *fowl of the air*, and *beast of the field* in verse twenty; it does not explicitly state that Adam named plants, minerals, or geographic features. What the text does show is the naming pattern continuing well past the animal kingdom: Genesis two, twenty-three, Adam naming Eve herself — *"she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man"* — and Genesis three, twenty, naming her again, Eve, *"the mother of all living."*[25] Adam's role as namer is demonstrably not limited to cattle and fowl; it extends to the one being closest to him. This study treats "Adam likely named a great deal more than the text explicitly records" as a reasonable, well-grounded inference from his demonstrated role and evident capacity — not a separate direct statement dressed up as more than it is.[26]

Weighing it: Direct statement for the naming; reasonable inference for its reach — this bears on no contested claim. Genesis 2:19-20 says Adam named the animals and that the names stood. That he named much more is inference, and the section says so.

IX. What Was Good for Food: Adam's Botanical Knowledge

Genesis two, verse nine: *"out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food."* Genesis two, sixteen and seventeen, God's own direct instruction, distinguishing the garden's trees generally — freely available — from the one specific exception.[27]

A man placed in a garden *"to dress it and to keep it"* (Genesis two, fifteen) needed to know, precisely, what he was tending — which plants fed a family, which merely decorated a landscape, and, per God's own explicit warning, which single tree stood apart from every other. This is not idle botanical curiosity; it is working knowledge, given partly by direct instruction and partly, this study infers, by Adam's own sustained observation of a garden he lived inside and cared for daily. Genesis one, twenty-nine, already establishes the broader principle from the animal side of the ledger: *"every herb bearing seed… and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed"* as food for man. A man entrusted with naming an entire animal kingdom, on the same day or shortly after, is a man this study reasonably pictures possessing an equally detailed working knowledge of the plant kingdom feeding him and his family — stated here as inference, consistent with, though not separately proven by, the naming account in Section VIII.[28]

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — bears on no contested claim; Adam knew the garden's plants well. The text states the assignment to dress and keep the garden. The depth of his botanical knowledge is inferred from that assignment.

X. Working with His Hands: Adam's Practical Knowledge

Genesis two, fifteen: Adam placed in the garden *"to dress it and to keep it"* — real, physical, skilled labor from the very beginning of his life, not idle leisure in a garden that tended itself.[29] Genesis three, twenty-one, after the Fall: God Himself *"made coats of skins, and clothed them"* — the first specific act of craft the text describes, one Adam presumably observed, and one his own line, within a handful of generations, would expand into named, specialized trades: Jabal's livestock and tents, Jubal's harp and organ, Tubal-cain's brass and iron, all covered in full in Chapter Two-A.[30]

Scripture does not describe Adam himself performing metallurgy or engineering — that specific, named expertise belongs to Tubal-cain, several generations later. What this section can responsibly say is that the *foundation* — working the ground with skill, tending a garden that required real horticultural knowledge, and, per Genesis three twenty-one, at least the beginning of garment-craft demonstrated directly by God and presumably observed and continued by Adam — begins with Adam and is inherited, expanded, and specialized by the generations that follow him. Presenting Adam himself as already possessing developed physics or engineering knowledge in the modern sense goes beyond what the text states, and this study would rather flag that boundary plainly than dress up an inference as a citation.[31]

Weighing it: Concession — the section limits its own claim and bears on no contested claim. It draws the line where the text draws it: work from the beginning, crafts developed by later generations.

XI. Kinds, Not Common Ancestry

Genesis one uses a specific phrase, repeatedly, across the whole chapter: *"after his kind"* — of vegetation, verses eleven and twelve; of sea creatures and birds, verse twenty-one; of land animals, verses twenty-four and twenty-five. Ten times in one chapter, the text insists on the same organizing principle.[32]

Creation-science writers — particularly through the young-earth field of *baraminology* (the term *baramin*, "created kind," was coined by Frank Marsh in 1941; the field has been developed by creationist biologists since, much of it published by Answers in Genesis and in *Answers Research Journal*) — argue this is a real, observable biological category: broader than the modern taxonomic rank of "species," but not infinitely elastic either.[33] What's actually observed in the natural world, on this reading, fits the pattern: rapid, extensive, real variation *within* a kind — the astonishing range of dog breeds produced from wolves in a few centuries of selective breeding, the famous variation among Darwin's own Galápagos finches — but no directly observed transition *between* fundamentally different kinds, no fish becoming an amphibian in a laboratory or a fossil bed anyone has actually watched happen. This study names, honestly and without minimizing it, that mainstream evolutionary biology does not accept "kind" as a formal category and reads the same variation-within-limits evidence as fully consistent with unlimited common descent given enough time — a genuine, technical, ongoing dispute this study is not going to pretend is settled in the wider scientific literature, even as this study's own conclusion follows the young-earth reading throughout.

It is also worth noting, carefully and without overclaiming, that Genesis one's broad organizational categories — plant life; then swimming and flying creatures; then land creatures, further divided into cattle, creeping things, and beasts of the earth (verse twenty-four) — map recognizably onto categories biology still uses operationally today: plant and animal kingdoms, aquatic versus terrestrial versus aerial life, domesticated versus wild. Genesis one is not a science textbook, and this study is not claiming it was written as one. But it describes the living world in categories that, over three thousand years after Moses, still hold up as a sensible way to organize what's actually out there.

Weighing it: Mixed, stated per point — "after his kind" is a direct statement; the limits of variation are a reasonable inference, not settled science. The ten uses of "after his kind" are in the text. That a created kind is a real, bounded biological category is the claim of baraminology; mainstream biology fairly answers that it recognizes no such category and reads the same variation as consistent with common descent over long periods.

XII. The Animals of a World Without Predators — and the Giants Among Them

Return, now, to the creature this chapter has held in reserve: the one every reader, regardless of what brought them to this study, actually wants to hear about.

Scripture never uses the word "dinosaur" — coined by the English paleontologist Richard Owen in 1842, centuries after the last book of the Bible was written. But the absence of the word is not the absence of the animal. Job, chapter forty, gives the fullest physical description in scripture of a creature many creation-science sources read as exactly this kind of animal. God himself describes it to Job, verses fifteen through twenty-four:

> *"Behold now behemoth, which I made with thee; he eateth grass as an ox. Lo now, his strength is in his loins, and his force is in the navel of his belly. He moveth his tail like a cedar: the sinews of his stones are wrapped together. His bones are as strong pieces of brass; his bones are like bars of iron… He lieth under the shady trees, in the covert of the reed, and fens… he trusteth that he can draw up Jordan into his mouth."*

Picture it as the text actually paints it. Strength emphasized repeatedly — loins, belly, bones "like bars of iron" — paired deliberately with a grass-fed diet. Not a predator's power; a herbivore's power, scaled to a size the text underlines with a detail no hippopotamus or elephant satisfies: a tail *"like a cedar."* A direct scholarly case for this reading, rather than a bare assertion, has now been checked against its actual source: creationist zoologist Allan Steel, writing in the peer-reviewed *Journal of Creation*, examined the Hebrew verb behind "moveth" in this verse and found "absolutely no philological justification" for the alternative translations ("stiffens," "hardens") some scholars have proposed specifically to force the verse to fit a hippopotamus, whose tail is, in Steel's words, "absurdly small" for any comparison to a cedar at all; an elephant fares no better, since the passage never mentions the tusks, trunk, or thick hide that would be the obvious details to include if either animal were intended. Steel's own conclusion, after systematically testing every proposed living identification against the text's actual details: "no known living animal fits the passage adequately."[34]

This study names that alternative reading honestly, as it has named every other live disagreement: some conservative scholars do read behemoth as a hippo or elephant, treating "cedar tail" as poetic exaggeration. The dinosaur-like reading is not scripture's only possible interpretation — it is, on the specific details the text actually supplies, and now on a directly-checked scholarly case for it, the reading this study finds most natural, and the one this study follows.

Picture, then, a family in the world this chapter has been painting, walking a garden path and passing, at a respectful but unafraid distance, a creature the size of a small building — its great tail swaying like a felled tree dragged through underbrush, its head lowered into a stand of reeds along a riverbank, utterly uninterested in them, because the ecological logic that makes a modern predator watch modern prey had simply not been switched on yet. That is this study's honest, textually-anchored answer to the question of dinosaur temperament: not invented past what the text supports, but drawn directly from behemoth's own described diet and the blanket herbivorous assignment of Genesis one, thirty. Grass-eaters. Calm by design. Enormous, but not predatory — because in the world Genesis one, thirty-one calls very good, nothing yet was.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim D: behemoth was a large, grass-eating, dinosaur-like creature living alongside man. That behemoth ate grass and had a tail "like a cedar" is a **direct statement**. That it was a sauropod-like dinosaur is a **reasonable inference**, argued by Allan Steel; many conservative scholars fairly answer that the passage is poetry and that the hippopotamus or elephant, described with poetic exaggeration, remains possible.

XIII. Nine Hundred Years

One final marker of how different this world was, and this chapter's closing piece of evidence.

Genesis five lays out, in the flat, record-keeping style of a genealogy — "he lived, he begat, he died," the same reporting style used for every figure in the chapter, not the style of legend or epic — a list of lifespans that reads, to modern eyes, almost like an error in transcription. Adam, nine hundred thirty

years. Seth, nine hundred twelve. Enos, nine hundred five. Cainan, nine hundred ten. Mahalaleel, eight hundred ninety-five. Jared, nine hundred sixty-two. Enoch, three hundred sixty-five years — the one entry in the chapter that closes differently from all the rest, *"and he was not; for God took him."* Methuselah, the longest-lived man in scripture, nine hundred sixty-nine years. Lamech, seven hundred seventy-seven. Noah, nine hundred fifty.[35]

Picture what a single life on that scale actually contains. On the genealogy's own numbers, Methuselah's life overlapped Adam's by two hundred and forty-three years — he could have known Adam directly, the first man's own living memory of Eden, the mist, a world before any curse, passed down across one unbroken human relationship spanning most of a millennium — and Noah, by the same reading, could have known Methuselah personally for six centuries before the Flood finally came.[36] Knowledge in that world — the naming of every creature, the botanical understanding of every plant, and, on the tradition this chapter has described, the meaning fixed permanently in the constellations overhead — did not need to be rediscovered generation after generation. It could simply be remembered, by people still alive to remember it, across spans of time that would today outlast the entire recorded history of most nations on earth.

And then, on the far side of the Flood, the numbers collapse sharply, within a handful of generations — Shem at six hundred years, and by Abraham's generation only a few links further down the chain, lifespans fallen into the low hundreds, closer to the range still familiar today.[37] This chapter is not going to explain why the Flood itself accelerated that collapse yet — that belongs to the Flood chapters ahead. What belongs here is the observation, stated plainly: the text describes a pre-Flood world operating under physical conditions this present world no longer has access to. A mist instead of rain. A gentler topography. A creature the size of behemoth grazing at peace. A man who could name an entire living world and remember it, personally, for the better part of a thousand years. Something happened between here and there.

And here is the reminder this chapter owes the reader before it closes, because it is easy to read the lifespans above as an interesting ancient curiosity and miss what they actually record. When Adam sinned, the sentence God had already named was not abstract — *"in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die"* (Genesis 2:17). Genesis five is where that sentence is seen landing. Listen to the chapter's refrain: *and he died*. Eight times an entry closes on those words — Adam, Seth, Enos, Cainan, Mahalaleel, Jared, Methuselah, Lamech — and only Enoch escapes them. Paul reads the same record the same way: *"death reigned from Adam to Moses"* (Romans 5:14).

Notice, though, what the numbers themselves do *not* show, because it would be easy to claim more than they carry. Before the Flood the lifespans do not slide steadily downward. They hold nearly level: Cainan outlived his father Enos, Jared outlived Adam, and Methuselah, eighth from Adam, outlived everyone. The sharp, sustained decline comes *after* the Flood, in Genesis eleven — which is why this chapter leaves its cause to the Flood chapters. What Genesis five measures, then, is not a slow erosion of years but something plainer and sadder: that under the Curse every life, however long, now ended. Corruption had entered a very good world, and it held every named man in it, however many centuries it took to arrive.

Weighing it: Direct statement for the numbers — for claim P: pre-Flood lives lasted centuries, and death reigned over every one of them. The lifespans and the refrain "and he died" are in the text; the overlap of Methuselah with Adam and with Noah is arithmetic from the text. Earlier versions claimed the Genesis 5 lifespans were already trending downward before the Flood; they are not — Jared and Methuselah outlived Adam — and the claim is withdrawn. The decline comes after the Flood. The

opposing reading fairly answers that the long ages may be symbolic or honorific numbers, as in some ancient king lists; the study reads them as the plain record they appear to be.

Closing: What This Chapter Established, and Where the Study Goes Next

Climate change is the occasion for this study. It was never meant to be its ceiling. Before a single thorn grew, before the ground ever resisted a plow, this was the world this chapter has now laid out in full: a Creator who spoke order out of formlessness in a sequence a modern scientist would still recognize as sensible, across six days this study has shown, from the Hebrew text's own grammar, to be ordinary rotations of light and dark rather than unspecified ages; a verdict — *tov me'od* — that this chapter has shown means something far more absolute than the English phrase "very good" lets on; lights in the heavens that gave man his entire experience of time and, on a tradition this chapter has now checked directly against its own primary source, once carried God's own redemptive message across the whole visible sky; a mist that watered a whole planet without violence, and a physical mechanism — the fountains of the great deep, examined here rather than left as an unexplained phrase — that this study has begun tracing from rupture to recession; a man capable of observing, naming, and remembering an entire created order in living detail; giants the size of buildings, grazing at peace; and lives long enough to hold all of it in a single, unbroken, living memory.

That is the baseline. That is what "very good," read in full, actually describes.

Several chapters remain before this study has finished laying its foundation. Chapter Two-A picks up exactly where this one leaves off — the day the curse was spoken, and the long, strange, increasingly rebellious centuries afterward in which a cursed world still produced cities, music, gold, and iron, even as the civilization built on that abundance turned it, generation by generation, into exactly the wrong kind of monument. Chapter Two-B then tells that same span, and the Flood that ended it, as a single continuous story. Chapter Three steps back to answer a chronological question this chapter has assumed throughout but not yet defended in full — how do we actually know how long ago any of this was — and brings in a modern, independent line of evidence for the same answer: what human DNA itself shows about how recently every living person shares common ancestry. Chapters Four, Five, and Six then turn to the Flood's own mechanism, the rock record it left behind, and the coal, oil, and gas still being drawn out of the ground today, before the study turns, in Chapters Seven through Ten, to what mankind has done with the resources the Flood left behind — the blessing and the curse, the pollution of air, water and land, and the present-day climate question this whole study was named for — and closes, in Chapter Eleven, by bringing the whole story back around to the new creation this present, groaning one is heading toward. That is where the study turns next.

Weighing it: Summary — restates the chapter; adds no weight of its own.

In Short

Genesis describes a finished, ordered world made in six ordinary days and pronounced "very good": plants for food, no predator and no grave, lights hung in the sky to keep time and to speak, a mist watering the ground, gentler land, a man who named the animals, and lives that ran for centuries. The six days rest on the Hebrew text itself; the no-death reading, the mist lasting until the Flood, and the gentler landscape are reasonable inferences that serious readers contest; the "gospel in the stars" is a tradition, not scripture.

Chapter Two-A — “The Curse and a Groaning World”

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

Every world this study will ever describe again — the one you live in included — is downstream of a single afternoon.

Chapter One left you standing in a garden with no need for rain, watching a creature the size of a building graze peacefully on reeds along a riverbank, in a world where nine hundred years was simply what a life looked like. Hold onto that picture, because this chapter is going to watch it begin, slowly and then not so slowly, to come apart — not because the world ran down on its own, the way a machine wears out over time, but because of one specific, documented, historical choice, made by two specific people, on one specific day.

I. The Day the Curse Was Spoken

Genesis three doesn’t linger. A conversation with a serpent, a piece of fruit, a moment of realized nakedness — and then, almost immediately, God’s own verdict, spoken directly, to the man, about the ground itself. Genesis three, verses seventeen through nineteen:

> *“Cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; in the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground.”*

Read carefully what is actually cursed here. Not merely Adam’s labor. Not merely his relationship to his work. The *ground* — the same ground Chapter One described as being watered evenly, gently, by a mist rising up out of it every day, without effort, without struggle, without a single thorn anywhere in the description. That ground, specifically, is what receives the curse.

The Hebrew word behind “cursed” is אָרוּר (*arur*) — a strong, formal term of judicial pronouncement, the same word that opens each of the twelve covenant curses in Deuteronomy 27. This is not an ordinary complaint or a figure of speech; it is a legal sentence, spoken by the ground’s rightful Owner, against the ground itself, on account of the man He had placed over it. Thorns and thistles — קוֹץ (*qots*) and דַּרְדַּר (*dardar*) — an entire category of plant life apparently absent from the description of Eden, enter the text here, at this verse, for the first time.[1]

Paul, writing many centuries later, traces the reach of that one moment outward until it touches everything. Romans five, verse twelve: *“by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin.”* Romans eight, verses twenty through twenty-two, further still — not humanity alone now, but the whole created order: *“the creation was made subject to vanity… the whole creation groaneth and*

travaileth in pain together until now.” First Corinthians fifteen, verses twenty-one and twenty-two: *“since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die.”*[2]

This is, in the plainest terms this study can put it, the actual answer this whole project gives to the question a modern audience expects a climate study to open with — *why is the world breaking down?* Not, first and foremost, industrial emissions, or land-use change, or anything belonging to the last two centuries of human history. The text’s own answer, given on page three of the entire Bible, is sin, and the specific curse that followed it. That doesn’t mean the modern, measurable effects later chapters of this study will examine honestly are imaginary or unworthy of real attention — they are neither. It means this study refuses to start the story in the wrong place. It starts here, in Genesis three, seventeen through nineteen, because that is where the text itself starts it.

Weighing it: Direct statement — for claim R: the ground was cursed on man’s account, and death entered by one man’s sin. Genesis 3:17-19, Romans 5:12 and 8:20-22 say it outright. Readers differ on how far the Curse reached into non-human nature; they do not differ on its having been pronounced.

II. A Curse, Not Yet a Ruin

Here is the detail a fast reading of Genesis skips past, and it is the hinge this entire chapter turns on: a curse is not the same thing as a ruin. Thorns, sweat, and sorrow are real and permanent changes to the created order — but they describe a world still carrying enormous, visible abundance, not yet a wasteland. The centuries between the Fall and the Flood — the span the Genesis five genealogy actually measures out, generation by nine-hundred-year generation — were not a slow slide into barrenness. They were something closer to the opposite: a still-lush, still-mineral-rich, still-largely-unspoiled world, gradually filling with the fruits of exactly the kind of sweat-and-labor productivity the Curse had just introduced — and, alongside that productivity, with a rebellion against the God who had made it all possible in the first place.

This is the “word picture” this chapter now paints in full — not a bullet list, but the world itself, walked through as a storyteller would walk you through it.

Gold, for the taking. Before the Fall, the text has already told us something worth carrying forward: Genesis two, verses eleven and twelve, describes the land of Havilah, near Eden itself, where *“the gold of that land is good”* — good enough, evidently, to be worth the text’s own specific mention, alongside bdellium and onyx stone.[3] Nothing in the narrative suggests the earth’s mineral wealth was stripped away at the Curse; a young, geologically undisturbed planet — one that had not yet been torn apart by the planet-reshaping violence Chapter One’s Section VI and Chapter Four together describe — is, if anything, a reasonable place to expect *more* easily accessible ore and gemstone deposits than a post-Flood world whose crust has since been folded, buried, and scattered.[4] Picture prospecting in that world: no need to sink a mine shaft a mile into bedrock chasing a vein some ancient upheaval had buried and compressed. Gold, sitting close to a young, unweathered surface, in a land whose very name the text remembers for exactly that reason.

Cities, astonishingly early. Genesis four, verse seventeen, records something that surprises most readers on a second look: Cain, the first murderer in human history, marries, has a son named Enoch, and *“builded a city, and called the name of the city, after the name of his son, Enoch.”*[5] Not a village. Not a scattered camp of wandering survivors. A city — organized, named, presumably defended — within a single generation of Adam and Eve’s own children. Picture what building a city actually requires: enough

surplus food that not everyone has to farm; enough division of labor that some specialize in construction, others in leadership, others in whatever trade or craft a growing population needs; enough population, in fact, to make a city worth building at all. All of that, this early, is only possible in a world still carrying forward the productive abundance of its very good beginning, even under a curse — and it is worth noting, as a point of real secular corroboration rather than scriptural argument alone, that the oldest secular king-lists of the ancient Near East (the Sumerian King List chief among them) independently remember their own earliest, pre-flood kings as ruling for implausibly vast spans of time, followed by a catastrophic flood, followed by dramatically shortened reigns afterward — a garbled, mythologized echo, on this study's reading, of the very pattern Genesis 5 and 11 record with sober precision.[6]

Livestock, tents, and the first specialized trades. A few generations later, Genesis four, verse twenty, names Jabal as *"the father of such as dwell in tents, and of such as have cattle"* — the first record of pastoral, livestock-based life as its own distinct way of living, alongside Cain's city-building line.[7] Civilization, by this point in the genealogy, has already branched into distinct trades and distinct ways of organizing a household and a livelihood — not the flat, undifferentiated subsistence a modern reader might picture for "ancient" people, but something recognizably complex.

Music — and not primitive music. Genesis four, verse twenty-one, in the very next breath: Jubal, *"the father of all such as handle the harp and organ."*[8] Two named instrument categories, a stringed instrument and a wind or reed instrument, common enough by this point to warrant their own remembered inventor. Picture an evening in one of Cain's growing cities: firelight, a meal drawn from fields that still, even cursed, produced abundantly; and somewhere in it, actual music — composed, performed, passed down — not grunts and drumbeats, but instruments sophisticated enough that the text bothers to name the man credited with originating them. This is not the world of popular imagination when people picture "early man." It is a world with harps.

Metalwork, and real technology. In the same verse family, Genesis four, verse twenty-two: Tubal-cain, *"an instructer of every artificer in brass and iron"* — not merely a smith himself, but a *teacher* of smiths, implying an entire trade, with students, passed down as a body of technical knowledge.[9] Brass and iron both, worked skillfully enough, and widely enough, to require dedicated instruction. Combine this with the gold already discussed above, and the picture sharpens further: a civilization with real metallurgy, real craftsmanship, and real mineral wealth to work with, all within a handful of generations of Adam and Eve being driven out of the garden.

Dinosaurs, still walking among all of it. Nothing in the text suggests the great land creatures Chapter One described — behemoth and its kind — vanished at the Fall. The Curse changes the ground, introduces death, and sets man's labor against a resistant creation; it does not, anywhere in the text, describe a mass extinction of specific animal kinds. It is entirely consistent with the narrative, then, to picture Cain's growing city, Jubal's music, and Tubal-cain's forges existing in a world where a family traveling between settlements might still, at a cautious distance, pass a grazing giant the size of a small building — the same calm, herbivorous creature Chapter One described from Job forty, its temperament unchanged, still living out the "every green herb for meat" assignment of Genesis one, thirty, even as the humans sharing its world had, by this point, begun choosing a very different path.[10]

A gentler landscape, still. The young-earth reading of Psalm 104 followed in Chapter One — that today's great mountain ranges are a Flood-era and post-Flood phenomenon rather than a pre-Flood one — means the entire world this chapter is describing, cities and forges and grazing giants alike, sat under a flatter sky than ours, without the mountain-driven storm systems, rain shadows, and extreme regional

climate variation that shape so much of the modern world's weather.[11] Every scene this chapter has painted so far — the city, the forges, the music, the grazing behemoth — played out under a milder, more even climate than any place on earth experiences today.

Weighing it: Mixed, stated per point — for claim P: cities, music and metalwork are direct statements; surface gold and dinosaurs living alongside men are inferences. Genesis 4 names Cain's city, Jabal, Jubal and Tubal-cain. That gold lay nearer the surface of an undisturbed young earth, and that behemoth's kind lived through these centuries, are **reasonable inferences** from silence and from the Flood model, and the notes say so. The Sumerian King List's long pre-flood reigns are **corroboration only**: they echo the pattern but are not independent confirmation of Genesis's numbers.

III. Abundance Turned to Rebellion

Here is the turn this chapter cannot avoid, because the text itself makes the turn, sharply and without excuse. All of that abundance — the gold, the cities, the music, the metalwork, the gentle climate, the long lifespans carried forward from Chapter One — did not produce a civilization of gratitude. It produced something closer to the opposite.

Lamech, Tubal-cain's own father, gives the first hint of where this is heading. Genesis four, verses twenty-three and twenty-four — a boast, delivered to his two wives, that reads less like a domestic remark and more like a warlord's proclamation:

> *"I have slain a man to my wounding, and a young man to my hurt. If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, truly Lamech seventy and sevenfold."*

This is not remorse. It is escalation, spoken proudly, by a man from the very lineage that gave the world its music and its metalwork — a pointed reminder, this early in the story, that technological and cultural sophistication is no guarantee of moral direction. A civilization can have harps and iron and still be building itself around violence.[12]

Genesis six carries that thread to its full, dark conclusion, and introduces a category of ruler this chapter's word picture would be incomplete without: verses one through four describe *"the sons of God"* taking wives from among *"the daughters of men,"* and the offspring of those unions described as *"giants… mighty men which were of old, men of renown."*[13]

Who "the sons of God" and "the Nephilim" were is one of the most debated questions in Genesis, and it deserves more than a passing line. There are two main readings. The older and still widely held one — found in the book of 1 Enoch, in much early Jewish and early Christian writing, and in many modern commentaries — takes the sons of God to be angels and the Nephilim their offspring, leaning on Job's use of the same phrase for angels and on Jude 6-7 and 2 Peter 2:4-5. This study follows the other main reading, held at least since Julius Africanus and Augustine, and sets out its case here.[14] The case for identifying "sons of God" begins one chapter earlier than Genesis 6 itself: Genesis 1 repeats the phrase "after his kind" ten times in fifteen verses, fixing a categorical boundary — plant to plant, fish to fish, beast to beast — that scripture never once records being crossed, in either direction, anywhere else in its historical narrative. An angel, a spirit being with no physical generative biology, producing biological offspring with a human woman would cross exactly that kind of boundary. On this reading, Genesis 1's own tenfold refrain tells against it — though a defender of the angelic reading can fairly answer that

“after his kind” governs reproduction within the created order of plants and animals, and says nothing about what spirit beings might do.

Scripture’s own usage points the identification a different direction. Genesis 6:2’s “saw… that they were fair… and they took” has close parallels in three other passages describing purely human desire acting through purely human choice: Eve’s own fall (“when the woman saw that the tree was good… she took,” Genesis 3:6), Shechem’s seizure of Dinah (“when Shechem… saw her, he took her,” Genesis 34:2), and David’s adultery with Bathsheba (“he saw a woman washing herself; and the woman was very beautiful,” 2 Samuel 11:2) — the exact pattern 1 John 2:16 later names “the lust of the eyes.” Genesis 4 and 5, the two chapters immediately before this one, have already traced two distinct lines: Cain’s, marked by escalating violence and closing in Lamech’s own boast of vengeance, and Seth’s, marked from its first mention — “then began men to call upon the name of the LORD” (Genesis 4:26) — by covenant faithfulness. “Sons of God,” on this reading, names Seth’s covenant line (the same derivative sonship scripture applies to Adam himself at Luke 3:38); “daughters of men” names the profane line generally. Their intermarriage — the covenant line drawn away by nothing more than outward appearance — is the first instance of a pattern scripture goes on to treat as one of its most sustained concerns, named explicitly in Exodus 34:16, Deuteronomy 7:3-4, Malachi 2:11, and 2 Corinthians 6:14’s “unequally yoked.”

“Nephilim” itself, from the Hebrew root *naphal* (“to fall”), is defined by Strong’s Concordance (H5303) as “a feller, i.e. a bully or tyrant” — “giant” is the KJV’s own translation choice, not the word’s root sense. The verse’s own second half supplies the gloss directly: “mighty men… men of renown,” a phrase — literally “men of the name” — that echoes Babel’s builders setting out to “make us a name” (Genesis 11:4) and is used word for word of Korah’s two hundred and fifty rebellious princes (Numbers 16:2): ordinary, if proud and violent, human beings in both places. Job’s own use of “sons of God” for angelic beings (1:6, 2:1, 38:7) is real and unchallenged on its own ground, but concerns a different passage answering a different question; it does not, by itself, require Genesis 6:2 to share that referent, any more than Adam being called a son of God requires every other use of the phrase to mean Adam. Jude 6-7 and 2 Peter 2:4-5, the strongest New Testament texts raised for the angelic-hybrid reading, read in their own structure as lists of separate historical judgment-precedents (unbelieving Israel, sinning angels, Sodom; sinning angels, the Flood, Sodom) rather than one event told three ways — neither writer states the angels’ sin and the Flood are the same event. And Noah’s own description, “perfect in his generations” (Genesis 6:9), is best read as moral uprightness — the same Hebrew root used of Job’s being “perfect” (Job 1:1) and of the psalmist’s “perfect man” (Psalm 37:37), and the same idea Luke expresses of Zacharias and Elizabeth, “blameless” (Luke 1:6) — not genetic or bloodline purity.

And then the verdict, delivered in language that leaves no room for a softer reading. Genesis six, verse five: *“GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.”* Verse eleven: *“The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence.”*[15]

Picture the whole arc this chapter has now walked: a curse that left the ground fighting back, but not yet barren; a civilization that used its inherited abundance to build cities, compose music, forge iron, and mine gold; and, running parallel to every one of those genuine achievements, a widening rebellion against the very God who had made any of it possible — climbing, generation by generation, until it reached the point Genesis six describes without qualification: every imagination, only evil, continually. Abundance, in this telling, did not produce worship. It produced the specific, dangerous confidence of a people who no longer felt they needed to answer to anyone above themselves.

That pattern is not, this study will argue as it goes on, only an ancient story. It is one this study returns to directly much later, when it looks honestly at how the modern world frames its own relationship to the earth's resources — abundance treated as an entitlement rather than a stewardship, and a Creator's authority quietly written out of the account of where that abundance came from in the first place.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim N: the sons of God were Seth's line, and the Nephilim human tyrants. The parallels of "saw… took" (Genesis 3:6; 34:2; 2 Samuel 11:2), the two lines of Genesis 4-5, and the Hebrew sense of *Nephilim* support this reading. The angelic reading fairly answers that "sons of God" means angels in Job 1:6, 2:1 and 38:7, that Jude 6-7 and 2 Peter 2:4-5 set sinning angels beside the Flood, and that this was the dominant reading in early Judaism and the early church. This study follows the Sethite reading as the more natural one, not as the only one a careful reader could hold. Earlier versions said Genesis 1's "after his kind" rules out the angelic reading "regardless"; that has been softened.

IV. What This World Left Behind

One thread from this chapter's word picture is worth naming clearly before it closes, because it is the thread this study is going to pull hardest on many chapters from now, and it deserves to be flagged honestly here rather than sprung on you later without warning.

Everything this chapter has described — Cain's forests and fields, the vegetation feeding a still-lush, still-abundant pre-Flood world, and, above and beyond the human civilization this chapter has focused on, an entire biosphere of plant and animal life on a scale this study has not yet even tried to describe in full — did not simply vanish when judgment finally came. Chapters Four through Six of this study will walk through in careful mechanical detail how the Flood's floodwaters are understood, on the young-earth model, to have uprooted, transported, and buried almost unimaginable quantities of vegetation — entire floating mats of forest, stripped of bark by the sheer turbulence of the water, sinking and compacting under pressure into what would become the coal seams the modern world still mines. And they will walk through, with the same care, how the staggering biological abundance a world like the one this chapter has just painted — nine-hundred-year lifespans, gentle climate, gold-rich soil, and, most of all, plant and animal life on a scale a post-Flood world never matched again — is the honest, creation-science answer to a question that should nag at anyone thinking carefully about the billions of barrels of oil still being drawn out of the ground today: where did that much biomass come from?

This chapter is not the place to answer that question in full — that belongs to Chapter Six, on coal and oil. But it belongs here, in preview, because it changes how you should read everything this chapter has just described. The cities, the forges, the music, the gold, the grazing giants, the fields lush enough to feed a still-growing civilization for over a millennium — all of it is not simply background color for an ancient story. It is, on this study's reading, the very stockpile that a single catastrophic year is going to bury, compress, and hand forward to the present day as the fuel burning in the modern world's engines and power plants right now. The ancient world this chapter has painted for you is not separate from the climate debate. It is where that debate's own raw material came from.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim K: the pre-Flood biosphere is the source of today's coal and oil. This is a preview of Chapter Six and carries that chapter's weight. The opposing reading fairly answers that most coal and oil are explained by ordinary swamps and marine sediments over long ages, a case Chapter Six sets out.

Closing

The Curse did not arrive as a ruin. It arrived as a verdict — cursed ground, sweat, sorrow, and death entering a world that, for a long time afterward, still carried enormous visible abundance forward from its very good beginning. Gold in the ground. Cities on the landscape. Harps and forges. A creature the size of a building still grazing peacefully at the edge of a field. And, running beneath all of it, growing generation by generation until it filled the whole earth: a rebellion the text names without softening — every imagination, only evil, continually.

Chapter Two-B now tells that whole span, and the Flood that ended it, as one continuous story. Then Chapter Three places it on a timeline you can actually check, stepping back from the word-picture to ask the harder chronological question underneath it: how far back does any of this actually reach, and on what grounds does this study trust that measurement over the deep-time framework most modern readers were taught as settled fact?

Weighing it: Summary — restates the chapter; adds no weight of its own.

In Short

The Curse fell on the ground, and death entered — but the world outside Eden stayed rich for a long time: cities, herds, harps and forges within a few generations. The same centuries filled with violence until God judged the earth. This study reads the "sons of God" of Genesis 6 as Seth's line marrying outside it, a reading many hold and many dispute, and it sees in that buried pre-Flood world the source of the coal and oil the modern world burns.

Chapter Two-B — "The Story of Man: Everyday Life From Eden to Ararat"

A Narrative, Grounded in Scripture and Creation Science

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

What follows is not a new argument. It is everything Chapters One and Two-A have already established — the ordered creation, the incorruptible bodies, the mist, the abundance, the curse, the long lifespans, the gold, the cities, the rebellion, the coming judgment — set down as a single continuous story, told in the kind of detail a camera would have recorded if one had been rolling. Every physical detail in it is anchored to something this study has already shown from scripture or from creation science. Where scripture is silent on a sensory detail — the color of a bird, the exact words of a conversation — imagination fills the space the way any faithful storyteller's must, without ever contradicting what the text states. Where scripture is silent on what a man felt inwardly, this narrative says so and stops, rather

than inventing an inner life the text never gave him. The moral arc of the years between the Curse and the Flood — abundance curdling into domination, exploitation, and violence — follows a pattern scripture traces again and again: a good God permitting genuine human freedom, and a world that used that freedom to build an empire of cruelty He did not want and did not cause. No footnotes interrupt the story below; a short note on its sources follows at the end.

What Made Adam Adam: Formed, Breathed, and Filled

Genesis describes Adam's beginning in three distinct movements, and the distinction matters for everything this narrative is about to show.

> **Genesis 2:7** *And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.*

Formed, first — a body, shaped by God's own hands out of the dust of the ground, matter this study's earlier chapters have already shown was very good, unspoiled, not yet touched by any curse. Breathed into, second — the breath of life, and with it, soul life: a living soul, the same basic constitution every man born since has shared, Adam included, considered simply as what he was in himself.

But scripture describes a third thing given to Adam as well, distinct from the body God formed and the soul life God breathed into it — God's own holy spirit, placed in him, and given upon a condition rather than granted as something no failure could touch. That condition was tied, from the very first command Adam ever received, to the one tree he was told not to eat from: *in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.* Adam did not fall over physically dead the afternoon he ate the fruit; he went on breathing for nine hundred and thirty more years. What died that day, immediately and completely, was the holy spirit he had been filled with from his first breath — withdrawn the moment the condition it was given upon was broken.

Scripture gives one clear comparison for what that gift, present and uninterrupted, actually looks like in a man. Jesus grew as any child grows — body and soul life, learning, developing, nothing about His early years described as anything but an ordinary human childhood. Only later, at His baptism, did He receive what scripture describes in language that admits no partial measure:

> **John 3:34** *For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.*

Without measure. Adam's case was not Jesus' gradual growth into that fulness; Adam was never a child. He was formed a grown man and, on this study's reading, filled from his very first breath with God's own spirit, without measure — the same completeness Jesus came into later in His own life, present in Adam from the start. That is, on this study's reading, the best explanation for everything the story below shows you about him: a man who named hundreds of unfamiliar creatures in a single unhurried encounter, who absorbed his Father's instruction as fast as it could be given, and who moved through a brand-new world with a fluency no ordinary human learning curve has produced since. Not because his body or brain were built unlike any born after him — Genesis gives no reason to think that — but because a man filled without measure with the spirit of a God who is Himself truth does not learn the way a spiritually empty man learns. He receives.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for this study's reading of Adam's constitution (not one of the ten claims): Adam was filled with God's spirit, on condition, and lost it the day he ate. Genesis 2:7 states body and breath; Genesis 2:17 states the condition. That a third gift, holy spirit without measure,

was given and withdrawn that day is this study's reading, with John 3:34 used by comparison. The opposing reading fairly answers that the death of Genesis 2:17 was the beginning of mortality and estrangement from God, and that John 3:34 speaks of Christ alone.

The Man Himself: What the Name Adam Actually Means

One more piece belongs here, before the story begins, because it shapes how every later reference to "the man" should be read.

Adam comes from the Hebrew word אדם (*adam*), meaning "human," "man," or "humankind" (Strong's H120). It is closely related to אדמה (*adamah*), meaning "ground" or "soil" (Strong's H127) — a wordplay Genesis makes directly, forming Adam from the dust of the ground, *the adam from the adamah* (Genesis 2:7), so that the name itself carries the sense of "the human formed from the ground."

Scripture uses *adam* in two related ways. In Genesis 1:27 it names humankind generally — male and female together. From Genesis 2 onward it becomes the name of one particular man, the first. Adam, then, is not only a personal name. It is also a word for humanity itself — earthly, formed from the ground, dependent on the God who formed it, and sharing, in Adam, a single common origin every reader of this account still shares.

Weighing it: Direct statement — *adam* means "man" or "mankind" and plays on *adamah*, "ground." This is standard Hebrew lexicography and bears on no contested claim.

The Story of Man: Everyday Life From Eden to Ararat

> **Genesis 2:7** *And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.*

I. The First Morning

The first thing that ever happened to the man was breath — not his own drawing it in, but Another's, pressed close, filling him.

We know he would have felt as any man feels, because he was a man, with a man's body and a man's senses. We cannot say what he felt, because scripture does not record it, and this narrative will not invent an inner life the text never gave him. What can be said, and said with confidence, is what he *was* in that first moment, because one verse says it: a body formed out of the ground by God's own hands; the breath of life breathed into that body; and, at that instant, a living soul — and, on what this chapter has already laid out, the spirit of God in him, without measure, from the same first breath.

We do not know what stage of life he was formed at. A grown man's frame, certainly, since he was given work and a command that same day — but scripture assigns him no age, and neither will this study. It does not matter to anything that follows. What matters is that everything in him worked, and worked perfectly, and that nothing in him had yet begun, even secretly, to fail.

He opened his eyes to green.

II. He Was Taught

From that first moment he was being taught, and this is the part of the account most tellings skip past — though it explains nearly everything else the story will show you.

A newly made man does not know the name of a river, or which fruit is good for food, or the word for the color in front of him. He has to be told, or shown. And that is precisely what the text describes: a God who gave direct instruction about which trees were his and which one was not; who assigned him work and the place to do it; who brought the animals to him to see what he would call them; and who came walking in the garden in the cool of the day — the ordinary daily rhythm of a Father's company, not a rare and formal visitation.

Adam's education was not trial and error across years of painful discovery. It was his Father's own instruction, given directly, into a mind with nothing in it to resist, distort, or forget what it received.

Picture the instrument that instruction was landing in. A brain and a mind without a single hindrance — no injury, no inherited weakness, no fatigue, no fog, nothing competing for attention, nothing in him that had ever once been wrong. Whatever God gave him he could take in whole, hold without losing it, and put to use immediately. That is not a claim this narrative is inventing about Adam's cleverness. It is simply what a man is when nothing in him has been damaged and the spirit of God fills him without measure. He did not need to be told a thing twice.

Language belongs here, because it is the clearest case the text itself supplies. Scripture never describes Adam learning to talk. It simply has him talking — and not in fragments, but in a full, structured, deliberate sentence the first time we hear his voice:

> **Genesis 2:23** *And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man.*

That is not a first word. It is a considered statement with a reason attached to it — *she shall be called Woman, because* — a man identifying what he is looking at, drawing a conclusion from it, and naming it accordingly. Language was given to him, not developed by him, and he had it from the beginning, well enough to use it for the thing language is actually for: naming truly.

III. A Body Without a Flaw in It

And the body that mind governed matched it, part for part.

Form. Bone set, muscle laid on, proportioned exactly as designed — nothing in him too weak for its work or straining past it. Standing was pleasure. Muscle answered will without a flicker of hesitation, because nothing between the intent and the motion had any fault in it.

Balance. He could walk uneven ground, climb, reach, carry, and stoop without a stumble he had to correct — inner ear and eye and limb reading the world together and answering it rightly the first time.

Digestion. He ate, and what he ate was used — taken in, broken down, turned to strength and warmth without a single one of the failures a modern body knows. No intolerance. No sluggishness after a meal. Nothing carried in on his food that could harm him. Nothing wasted.

Endurance. He could work a full day in a garden that actually needed working and come to the end of it not spent but satisfied. Tiredness after honest labor is the ordinary experience of a working body, and

there is no reason to think he was exempt from it. What he did not carry was the other thing men carry — soreness that lingers, weakness that accumulates, a body that gives out before the work does.

The senses, as guidance. This is worth saying plainly, because it is easy to picture Adam's senses as merely pleasant and miss what they were actually for. Every one of them was an instrument of guidance in a world he was learning. His eyes told him where the ground fell away, which fruit was ripe, which creature was approaching and how. His ears placed the river behind him without his turning around. Touch told him the water was cold, the bark rough, the fruit yielding under his thumb. Taste and smell told him, truthfully and immediately, what was good for food — the same senses every man still has, and still uses for exactly this, working in him without one of them ever having lied to him or failed him.

And over all of it, governance. His mind governed his body, and did it perfectly — not a man fighting his own appetites or overriding his own impulses, because nothing in him yet pulled against anything else in him. And over the mind itself, the spirit of God in him, filled with truth. That is the ordering this whole chapter turns on: spirit governing mind, mind governing body, body meeting a world made very good — every layer working, and working together, with no conflict anywhere in the arrangement.

Everything that goes wrong from Genesis 3 forward is, one way or another, that ordering coming apart.

IV. The Garden, and the Work in It

He walked, and the walking was discovery.

A river came up out of the ground and parted into four heads, and the text bothers to name all four — Pison, Gihon, Hiddekel, Euphrates — and bothers further to tell us what lay along the first of them: the land of Havilah, *where there is gold; and the gold of that land is good*, and bdellium and the onyx stone besides. That detail is not decoration. It is the first inventory of the earth's mineral wealth in scripture, recorded as a known, named, locatable fact in a world where gold sat close enough to an unweathered surface to be simply *there*, in the ground, near a riverbank a man could walk to.

The water ran clear enough to show color-shot stones on its bed, cold where he touched it and sweet when he cupped his hands and drank. Trees stood in ranks and clusters he had no names for yet, heavy with fruit in more colors than he had words to count — hanging low enough in places that he simply reached and took, and the taking cost the tree nothing and cost him nothing either. No thorn drew blood from his hand. No bitterness met him where he had expected sweetness.

Everywhere he looked, abundance did not compete with itself. There was no dead branch anywhere in sight, no fruit rotting unclaimed and swarmed by anything, no patch of ground gone hard and cracked under a punishing sun — because the sun did not punish yet, and the ground had never once gone dry. Every morning it drank from a mist that rose, gentle as breath, out of itself, watering every leaf and root evenly, with no storm cloud anywhere overhead to threaten it. No rain had yet fallen on the earth. And if this study's reading of Genesis 2:5-6 is right, nothing in his experience, or in the experience of anyone who would come from him for sixteen centuries, would give him a category for water falling out of the sky.

And this was a real body in a real world, not a figure moving through a painting. Warmth on his skin meant a body that could grow warm, and a body that could grow warm cooled itself the ordinary way every human body does, in the same quiet, unremarkable sweat that had nothing yet about it to make it unpleasant. He grew hungry and ate. He felt the air cool toward evening and knew what it was. He was a man, in the plainest sense of the word.

And he was given work. Not idleness in a garden that tended itself, but a real assignment in a real place: *to dress it and to keep it.* Two verbs, both of them labor. The garden did not need rescuing — nothing in it was failing — but it needed tending, and it had been given to a man who could tend it, and who would rather work it than not.

He learned that garden the way any keeper learns a place he loves. Which tree bore first in a season and which bore last. Which fruit was best straight from the branch and which improved left in the sun. Where the ground held water and where it drained. And because naming was already the deepest thing he knew how to do, the naming did not stop at what God brought him. It went on, quietly, across leaf and root and stone and the shape of the eastern hills at evening, until the whole garden was, in some real sense, *his* — known, named, and cared for.

One tree stood apart, and he knew which one, because he had been told plainly. He could eat of every tree of the garden freely. Of that one he could not, and the reason given was not arbitrary or withheld: *in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.* He had, at that point, never seen anything die. He had the word because his Father had given him the word, and he had every reason to trust the One who gave it.

V. The Naming

And then the animals began to come.

They came without fear, because fear had nowhere yet to live in this world. A lion the color of late honey padded out from beneath a fig tree's shade and stood close enough to touch, its great head lowering not in menace but in something nearer curiosity — and the man looked into its eyes and felt nothing in himself rise up to flee, because there was nothing in the lion's own carriage asking him to. Grass-eaters, all of them, every creature in the world by God's own assignment of every green herb for food — and it showed in how they moved. Unhurried. Unwatchful. None of the coiled readiness a hunted thing carries in its shoulders even at rest.

A vast, patient shape moved along the riverbank not far off, taller at the shoulder than any house the man would ever build, its tail trailing behind it through the reeds like a felled cedar dragged through underbrush, utterly unbothered by his presence — more interested in the green mat of water plants it was drawing steadily into its mouth than in the newly made creature watching it in open wonder.

They came, and as each one came, something in the man rose to meet it — a kind of seeing that went past the animal's shape into what it actually was, distinct from every other creature that had come before it. And out of that seeing, without hesitation, without searching for the word the way a man searches now, a name arrived and fit, the way a key fits a lock built to receive it.

This was not ordinary learning, the slow accumulation a child manages a word at a time. It was a mind and a spirit filled without measure from the first breath — receiving, rather than gradually acquiring.

He named them as they came. Cattle, and fowl of the air, and every beast of the field. Hundreds of them; thousands, perhaps. Each one observed closely enough, in a single unhurried encounter, to be given a name that became — in that instant and ever after — that creature's actual name. It is the first act of classification in human history, and the man performing it got every one of them right.

And somewhere in the vast unspooling catalog of it, something became apparent that had not been apparent before. Every animal that came to him came paired, mate answering mate. He alone, among all of it, stood single.

VI. The Woman

He did not ask for what came next.

He slept — the first sleep any creature had ever taken in that world, a deep, undefended rest, because nothing yet existed that a sleeping man needed defending from. And he woke to find himself lighter, and to find, standing where no one had stood a moment before, someone he knew before he had ever been told her name, the same way he had known every animal's name before he spoke it.

This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh, he said — and then, because naming was the deepest thing he knew how to do, he named her too: *she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man.*

They stood together, unclothed and entirely unashamed, because shame, like fear, had not yet been invented either. There was nothing in either of them to hide, and nothing in the other to hide it from.

What their days were like, in the unmeasured stretch of time before everything changed, is not hard to picture once the world itself is pictured rightly. They worked. They ate. They learned the garden together, and between them a whole private vocabulary grew up around every growing thing in it — names for trees the text never bothered to record, the way a family today invents its own words for its own familiar places.

VII. In the Cool of the Day

And in the cool part of every day, Another came walking.

This was the center of everything else. Not a formal audience. Not a ritual observance. The plain, ordinary, daily fact of a Creator who wanted their company and came for it, walking with them in a garden He had built for exactly this.

What was said in those walks scripture does not record, and this narrative will not invent it. But the shape of it is not hard to infer from everything else this study has shown: a God who speaks, who explains, who answers — teaching two people who had everything to learn and nothing yet clouding their ability to learn it. About the lights He had hung on the fourth day, and the story Chapter One has already described as written into their arrangement. About the seasons those lights were built to mark. About who He was, and who they were, and why any of it existed at all.

They walked in unbroken fellowship with the God who made them, in bodies that did not know how to fail, in a world where the word *death* existed only as a warning about one tree, spoken once, and otherwise had nothing yet to attach itself to.

VIII. The Afternoon

It ended on an afternoon that began exactly like every other one.

The serpent was there before either of them noticed — more subtle than any beast of the field, and using that subtlety now toward an end no creature in that garden had yet imagined a creature could have. The words were quiet and reasonable-sounding, the kind that do not announce themselves as an attack until the attack is already finished. *Yea, hath God said?* Then a flat contradiction of what God had said: *Ye shall not surely die.* Then the offer underneath it: *your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.*

The woman looked at the fruit the way she had looked at ten thousand other pieces of fruit in that garden without a second thought, and this time looked longer. It was, the text says plainly, good for food, and pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise — every ordinary appeal a piece of fruit in that garden had always had, aimed now at a decision no fruit in that garden had ever carried before.

She took. She ate. She gave to her husband with her, and he — watching, knowing, not deceived — ate too.

Nothing visible happened at first, and that is, in its own way, the most unsettling detail in the whole account. No thunderclap. No visible wound. No dramatic collapse.

What happened instead was internal, immediate, and total. The spirit that had filled the man without measure from his first breath was gone in that instant, exactly as the warning had said — a real death, spiritual and complete, while the body it had indwelt went on breathing. The ordering came apart at the top, and everything beneath it began, from that moment, to come apart in turn.

And eyes that had never once turned inward to examine themselves suddenly did. What they found there, for the first time, was nakedness — not merely the absence of clothing, which had been true and unremarkable every day before this one, but a new and sickening awareness of exposure, of vulnerability, of something in themselves now worth hiding.

They sewed fig leaves together — clumsy, hurried work from hands that had never before needed to hide anything from anyone.

And when the sound of walking came again in the cool of that same day — the same sound that had meant, every other day of their lives, that the best hour of the day had arrived — for the first time in their existence they ran from it instead of toward it, and hid themselves among the trees they had spent their whole lives naming.

IX. The Sentence, and the First Promise

The conversation that followed is the saddest one scripture records, because every line of it is two people who had never once needed to explain themselves suddenly scrambling to explain — to shift, to point elsewhere. The man at the woman, and past her at the God who gave her. The woman at the serpent. And a God who already knew everything asking each question anyway, patiently, because the asking itself was mercy: room to speak before the sentence came.

Then it came, plainly, without cruelty and without exception.

The serpent, cursed above all cattle and above every beast of the field. The woman, her sorrow and her conception multiplied, and a new tension set loose between her and the man she had, a moment before, stood beside in uncomplicated equality. And the ground itself — the same ground that had never once resisted them, that had produced its abundance without a thorn anywhere in it — cursed now, on the man's own account:

> **Genesis 3:17** *…cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; 3:18 Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; 3:19 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.*

The sweat itself was nothing new. A working man's body had always cooled itself that way, from the first afternoon he stood in a warm sun and drew a full breath. What was new was everything that sweat would now mean — not the light, easy exertion of tending a garden that had never fought him, but hard, resisted, sometimes bitter labor wrung out of him by ground that would answer his hands with thorns as often as with harvest.

And one more thing was said, spoken into the middle of the judgment rather than after it, addressed to the serpent but aimed past him at everything that would follow:

> **Genesis 3:15** *And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.*

A coming seed of the woman. Wounded in the heel; crushing the serpent's head. It is the first promise of rescue in the whole of human history, and it was given in the same breath as the sentence itself, before either of them had taken a single step out of the garden. Whatever else that afternoon took from them, it did not take away hope — planted, cryptic, and certain, in the very moment everything else was lost.

The man heard it, and did something that only makes sense if he had understood it. He named his wife again. Not *Woman* now, the name he had given her out of his own side, but **Eve** — *because she was the mother of all living*. A man who had just been told he would return to the dust turned to the woman beside him and named her for life, and for a lineage, and for a promise about her seed that had been spoken perhaps ten minutes earlier. Of everything recorded about Adam after the Fall, that is the single act that says most about what he had heard.

X. Skins, and the First Sacrifice

Then God did something for them that they could not do for themselves.

> **Genesis 3:21** *Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them.*

The fig leaves were their own work and did not suffice. What sufficed came from God's own hand, and it came at a cost neither of them had ever witnessed before: skins meant an animal, and an animal meant death — the first death either of them had ever seen, in a world where nothing had died until that week.

It was not only a covering. It was an instruction, given the only way it could be given to two people who had never seen death: a substitute's life taken so that their shame could be covered, acted out in front of them by God Himself before either of them was ever asked to act it out themselves. That is where the pattern begins — the pattern their own sons would practice without needing to be told a second time, the pattern the whole sacrificial system of the Law would later formalize, and the pattern the promised seed of the woman would one day fulfil once and for all.

They watched an animal die so that they could be clothed. It is impossible to overstate what a thing that would be to see, the first time anyone had ever seen it.

And then they were sent out.

> **Genesis 3:23** *Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. 3:24 So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east*

> *of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.*

Cherubim, and a flaming sword turning every way, set to keep the way of the tree of life. Not a door closed behind them — the text says nothing about a door — but a way guarded, and a road they would not walk again.

Ahead of them: a world still recognizably the one they had just left. The same sun and stars. The same mist rising from the same ground each morning. The same abundance, still, for now, largely unspoiled. But carrying, from that single afternoon forward, a wrongness worked into its very fabric that no amount of familiar beauty could fully hide again.

XI. Outside

What the first weeks were like is not hard to picture, once you have pictured what changed and what, for a long time yet, did not.

The first ache either of them ever felt in a joint. The first time sweat stung the eyes from hard, resisted labor rather than simply cooling the skin the way it always had. The first thorn, drawing the first drop of blood either of them had ever seen come from their own flesh, on ground that fought the man's hands now instead of yielding to them.

And beneath all of it, something neither of them could see directly but which the man was already, without knowing it, beginning to measure in his own body: a clock, now running, that had never run before — a slow, inexorable drift toward an end that had, until that afternoon, simply not existed as a category their bodies belonged to.

And yet — this is the part a hurried telling loses, and this study will not lose it — the world outside Eden was not a ruin. It was still, by any measure a modern reader could bring to it, staggeringly abundant. The mist still rose every morning. The gold of Havilah still lay close to a young, unweathered surface, waiting to be found rather than mined a mile down through folded and buried rock. The great grazing giants still moved along the riverbanks, untroubled, grass-eating, calm.

What had changed was not the world's abundance so much as the labor required to draw it out — and the presence, now, of a real and growing shadow the two of them carried wherever they went. The shadow of a death that had not yet arrived for either of them personally, but that both of them now knew, with a certainty neither had ever needed before, was coming.

XII. Two Brothers, Two Offerings

Children came.

A firstborn son, Cain, and the mother's own words at his birth — *I have gotten a man from the LORD* — carry a hope in them, and perhaps the flicker of a thought that the promised seed had already arrived. He had not. A second son followed, Abel.

The two grew into two different callings. Abel, a keeper of sheep. Cain, a tiller of the ground — the same resistant ground his father had been sentenced to. And they grew, too, into two different postures toward the God their parents still brought offerings to, east of Eden, in the manner they had been shown on the day they left the garden.

In process of time, both brought an offering. Cain brought of the fruit of the ground. Abel brought of the firstlings of his flock and of the fat thereof — a life, and the best part of it.

> **Genesis 4:4** …*And the LORD had respect unto Abel and to his offering: 4:5 But unto Cain and to his offering he had not respect. And Cain was very wroth, and his countenance fell.*

Scripture does not say *how* that respect was shown, and this narrative will not claim more than the text gives. But it is worth noticing what an accepted sacrifice looked like everywhere else scripture shows us one. At the consecration of Aaron, fire came out from before the LORD and consumed the offering. At Gideon's rock, fire rose and consumed it. At Elijah's altar on Carmel, the fire of the LORD fell and consumed the sacrifice, the wood, the stones, and the dust. At David's threshing floor, and again at the dedication of Solomon's temple, the same: fire from heaven, consuming what God accepted.

If that pattern was already in place in a field east of Eden, then both brothers saw the difference with their own eyes, and neither had to be told which offering had been received. That would explain Cain's fury better than any private, invisible verdict could — not a man guessing, but a man who watched.

God's word to him afterward is not a rejection; it is an invitation, with a warning attached: *If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door.*

He did not listen. In a field, away from any other eyes, the older brother rose against the younger and became, in the plainest and most terrible sense, humanity's first murderer — the first death of an image-bearer at the hand of another image-bearer, blood crying out from ground that had already been cursed once and now absorbed a second and deeper wrong.

And the questions came again, the way they had come in the garden: *Where is Abel thy brother?* The same patience. The same room to speak. And this time an answer that has echoed for six thousand years: *Am I my brother's keeper?*

XIII. A City, a Harp, and a Forge

Cain was driven further out, marked and marred — and yet, within a single generation of that first murder, in the land of Nod east of Eden, he built a city, and named it after his own son.

Picture what that sentence is actually describing. Enough people, already, descended from one man and one woman, to make a city worth building. Enough surplus, still drawn from a cursed-but-not-ruined ground, to feed people who were not all farming. Enough organization, this early, for someone to be recognized as the founder and namer of a settled place.

Cain's line did not vanish into obscurity or subsistence. It flourished — and flourished specifically in the direction of craft and culture.

Jabal, father of such as dwell in tents and have cattle: an entire way of life organized around livestock, named and remembered. His brother Jubal, father of all such as handle the harp and the organ — a stringed instrument and a wind instrument, both developed enough by that point to warrant remembering the man credited with them. So that within a handful of generations of the world's first murder there was already music: real, composed, remembered-by-name music, played on real instruments, in growing cities. And their half-brother Tubal-cain, *an instructer of every artificer in brass and iron* — not merely a smith but a teacher of smiths, a whole trade handed down as transmitted skill rather than each generation starting over from nothing. Their sister Naamah is named too, in the same breath, without explanation, the way a family record names a daughter everyone already knew.

Picture an evening in one of those cities. Firelight. A meal drawn from fields that still, even cursed, produced abundantly. The ring of a hammer on iron somewhere down the street, and a harp somewhere else. Gold — from Havilah or from any of a hundred places like it — changing hands. This is not the world of popular imagination when people picture "early man." It is a world with harps and forges, four or five generations out of Eden.

And running alongside all of that genuine, glittering achievement, something else grew.

Lamech, father of that gifted household, stood before his two wives one evening — for by his generation a man taking more than one wife was already a settled fact of that world — and did not confess a sin. He boasted of one:

> **Genesis 4:23** *…Hear my voice; ye wives of Lamech, hearken unto my speech: for I have slain a man to my wounding, and a young man to my hurt. 4:24 If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, truly Lamech seventy and sevenfold.*

Open escalation, delivered proudly, by a man whose own household had just given the world its music and its metalwork — as though technical brilliance and moral direction had nothing whatsoever to do with each other. They did not, in that household. A civilization can hold harps in one hand and a bloodied blade in the other, and for Cain's whole growing line, across centuries this narrative can barely gesture toward, that is exactly the civilization that grew.

XIV. The Other Line

Not every line went that direction.

Seth was born to Adam and Eve — *appointed*, his mother said, in Abel's place. And through Seth's own son Enos, the text records something that reads like a quiet counter-movement against everything Cain's line was becoming:

> **Genesis 4:26** *…then began men to call upon the name of the LORD.*

A worshipping people, gathering, generation on generation, alongside a civilization of builders and boasters. Two lines running parallel for century after century — sharing the same abundant world, drinking from the same mist, eating from fields the same cursed-but-still-generous ground kept producing — and growing further and further apart in everything that actually mattered.

XV. Nine Hundred Years of Living Memory

Picture what a single lifetime in that world actually held, because it is almost impossible for a modern reader, used to seventy or eighty years, to feel the scale of it without deliberately stopping to try.

Adam lived nine hundred and thirty years. Which means Adam himself — the first man, the one who had walked with God in an unfallen garden and been driven out of it — was *still alive*, a living, breathing, personally-rememberable presence, through the first several centuries of nearly every name recorded in Genesis five.

A child born in those centuries did not learn about Eden from a book, or from a legend passed down through a dozen uncertain retellings. There was a real chance he could walk to wherever Adam was living and hear it directly, in Adam's own voice, from the only man who had ever actually been there.

What the light was like. What the animals did when they came to be named. What the walking in the cool of the day sounded like. What the fruit tasted like, and what it cost.

Methuselah, born in the eighth generation from Adam, overlapped him by two hundred and forty-three years before Adam died, and could have known him personally for all of them. And Methuselah himself lived nine hundred and sixty-nine years, the longest life recorded in scripture — dying, on the most straightforward reading of the genealogy's own numbers, in the very year the Flood came, after living long enough to know his own grandson Noah personally for six centuries.

Great-great-great-grandparents were not distant, half-remembered names in that world. They were living relatives — present at gatherings, teaching skills with their own hands, correcting their great-great-great-grandchildren's mistakes in a craft they themselves had learned from someone who had learned it from someone who had, quite possibly, learned it from Adam directly.

That is the texture this narrative wants a reader to feel: a world of enormous, overlapping, living memory, where knowledge did not have to survive the ordinary human tragedy of being forgotten in three or four generations, because the people who held it were, very often, simply still there. Still working. Still teaching. For centuries past the point where a modern family loses every direct living connection to its own great-grandparents.

Which makes what happened next harder to explain, not easier. This was not a world that forgot God because the memory had faded. It was a world that turned from Him while the men who could still describe Eden firsthand were alive to be asked.

XVI. The Sons of God and the Daughters of Men

Into that long, abundant, overlapping world, the two lines kept diverging — and then, at length, stopped diverging in the worst possible way.

Cain's descendants, and increasingly others besides, built more cities and worked more gold. Nothing in the text suggests the earth's mineral wealth had grown scarce; if anything, a young, geologically undisturbed world, not yet torn apart by the violence a Flood would one day unleash, gave up its gold and gemstone and ore closer to an unweathered surface than any prospector since has enjoyed. They forged more iron, bred more cattle, composed more music, built more of everything a resourceful, technically gifted, increasingly godless people could build.

And somewhere in the middle of all that glittering abundance, the line that had been calling on the name of the LORD stopped keeping itself separate.

> **Genesis 6:1** *And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, 6:2 That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose.*

This narrative will name plainly what that describes, following the reading set out in Chapter Two-A, Section III — while granting that the older angelic reading has serious defenders. "The sons of God" is Seth's covenant line — the same ordinary, derivative sonship scripture applies to Adam himself. "The daughters of men" is the profane line generally. And the mechanism of the disaster is the plainest and most human one there is: they *saw*, and they *took*, on nothing sturdier than fair looks — the identical sequence that had undone Eve in a garden not so many centuries behind them, and that would later undo Shechem at the sight of Dinah, and David on a rooftop. Scripture has its own name for it: the lust of the eyes.

What that intermarriage produced, the text calls **Nephilim** — a Hebrew word built on a root meaning *to fell*, better rendered *bully* or *tyrant* than the giant of English legend. And the verse supplies its own gloss in the next breath: *mighty men which were of old, men of renown* — the same phrase scripture uses of Korah's rebellious princes, and an echo of Babel's builders setting out to make themselves a name. Not an alien race. Not a hybrid. An ordinary, dangerous, and very human kind of man, produced when the one line still calling on God's name stopped guarding whom it joined itself to.

Outsized in power and cruelty far more than in stature, these were the strongmen a decaying world's cities and gold and forged iron increasingly came to answer to. Weaker households answered to stronger ones. Cities answered to their strongest men. Whole regions, most likely, answered to whichever tyrant had accumulated enough followers, enough gold, and enough iron in enough hands to make answering to him the safer choice.

The abundance never stopped. What stopped, slowly and then all at once, was any widespread sense that the abundance had come from somewhere, and was owed to Someone.

By the time the record reaches its verdict, there is no softness left in the language at all.

> **Genesis 6:5** *And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.*
> **Genesis 6:11** *The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence.*

Corrupt, not merely flawed. Violent, not merely imperfect. A world of harps and iron and gold and cities and nine-hundred-year memories, arrived — by the plain, unflinching weight of its own accumulated choices — at exactly that.

And a limit was set on it: *yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.* On one long-standing reading, a countdown, measured out in plain sight, that the whole world could have watched running down; on another, a new limit on the length of a man's life.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim N, carried into the story. The story follows the Sethite reading weighed in Chapter Two-A §III; the angelic reading has serious defenders, and the story's picture of the Nephilim as human tyrants rests on that choice.

XVII. One Man Still Found

And into that world, one man was still found who had not gone the way of the rest of it.

Noah was born into the line of Seth, ten generations from Adam, a great-grandson — on the most straightforward reading of the overlapping genealogy — of Enoch. Whatever he was taught by his own father Lamech, and by Methuselah, who by every reasonable count of the genealogy's numbers lived to see Noah reach roughly six hundred years of age, it evidently held.

> **Genesis 6:8** *But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD. 6:9 …Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with God.*

Perfect in his generations: upright, whole, morally sound in a generation that was none of those things — the same sense in which Job was called perfect, and the psalmist's righteous man, and Zacharias and Elizabeth. Not a man of a different bloodline. A man of a different life.

And Peter gives him one further description that says everything the rest of this narrative needs: *a preacher of righteousness*.

Picture what that preaching actually looked like. Not a solitary man muttering warnings to himself in an empty field, but a real, public, sustained ministry — and one delivered by a man whose household had every reason to be listened to. Picture him at the edge of a marketplace in one of those growing cities. Gold changing hands somewhere nearby. The ring of a smith's hammer sounding from a forge down the street. Laborers passing with cattle bound for somebody's table. And Noah — an old man by any reckoning we would use, but still young by that world's extraordinary standard — telling anyone who would stop long enough to listen that the world they were building, however glittering, however abundant, stood under a judgment that was actually coming.

Not a metaphor. Not a vague warning about future consequences. Water, he told them. Water falling from the sky.

And there is the whole difficulty of his ministry in a single word. On the reading this study has followed, it had never rained. Not once, in the entire history of the world, in the memory of any living person or of their fathers or of their fathers before them. Every morning of every year of sixteen centuries, the same gentle mist had risen out of the same ground and watered everything evenly, exactly as it always had.

Peter, writing many centuries later about a different set of scoffers, names the exact mechanism at work: *all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.* A civilization that had never once seen it rain had every ordinary, lived-experience reason to find Noah's warning not merely unwelcome but genuinely, experientially unimaginable — and century after century of that same unbroken mist rising every morning exactly as it always had, that is very nearly what the whole world, outside one household, seems to have concluded.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim P, carried into the story: it had never rained before the Flood. Genesis 2:5-6 speaks of the time before man was made. That no rain fell for the next sixteen centuries is this study's inference, and the story says so. The "hundred and twenty years" of Genesis 6:3 is read by some as a countdown and by others as a lifespan limit; the story no longer states that the ark took that long to build.

XVIII. The Building

And still Noah kept preaching. And still, alongside the preaching, he built.

He had been given specifications, and they were exact. Gopher wood. Rooms — *nests*, more literally, small enclosed compartments — built throughout. Pitch, within and without, sealing every seam against the specific catastrophe it was built to survive. Three hundred cubits long, fifty broad, thirty high: by any reasonable reckoning of the ancient cubit, something on the order of a football field and a half in length and taller than a four-story building — a wooden structure of a size the ancient world, so far as any surviving record shows, would not attempt again for millennia. Three decks. A window, finished to a cubit above. And one door, set in the side.

Picture it rising, over what was very likely decades of steady, patient, unbearably public labor, in full view of a settlement that watched it grow year by year and, by every indication scripture gives, never once took the warning seriously enough to build anything of its own.

Timber gathered and shaped. Pitch boiled and spread. Noah's three sons — Shem, Ham, and Japheth, each married by the time the work was finished — working alongside him, year after year, raising a

structure whose entire purpose depended on a claim their neighbors found laughable: that the sky, which had never once opened in the whole of their world's remembered history, was about to open.

Hebrews says he was *moved with fear*. Not panic — reverence, the kind that takes God at His word about something it has never seen and acts accordingly for as many years as the work required.

XIX. The Door

The animals came first.

Not driven. Not hunted down and dragged aboard. *Coming* — the text says plainly that they came unto Noah, two by two of every sort, and by sevens of the clean, the same way every animal in Eden had once come to Adam to be named. An echo of that first unhurried encounter, now serving an entirely different purpose.

Then seven days. Seven days in which the door still stood open and the ramp still down — the last possible chance for anyone in that whole teeming, glittering, condemned civilization to change course and climb aboard.

Nobody did.

> **Genesis 7:16** *…and the LORD shut him in.*

Not Noah. Not his sons. The LORD shut the door — which is mercy and judgment in the same gesture, and the last quiet moment in the account before everything breaks.

XX. The Year Inside

And then it began.

Picture the first hour of it, for a family that had never once in any of their collective centuries felt actual rain fall from an actual sky. Not a shower. Not a storm passing through the way a modern reader instinctively imagines it.

> **Genesis 7:11** *…the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened.*

The fountains of the great deep, *broken up* — a Hebrew word for violent structural rupture, the same verb family used when the sea split at the Exodus and when the earth opened to swallow Korah. Something beneath the world tore open, releasing forces no one alive had a category for. And the windows of heaven opened, and water fell from above on a world whose entire hydrological history gave it no precedent to expect it, let alone survive it.

Forty days and forty nights, without pause. And somewhere in the first hours of it, the ark — sealed, pitched, enormous, and utterly beyond its builders' control now — began to lift, gently at first and then unmistakably, off the ground its keel had rested on through every year of its long construction.

Inside: eight people and a whole living catalogue of the animal kingdom, riding out what the text describes with spare, almost unbearable restraint. The waters prevailed exceedingly upon the earth, and all the high hills under the whole heaven were covered, and fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail. Everything on the dry land in whose nostrils was the breath of life, died.

Every one of Noah's neighbors who had watched the ark rise for decades and never once climbed aboard. Every city Cain's line had built. Every forge, every harp, every hoard of gold lying close to a young world's unweathered surface. The whole glittering, violent, gifted, godless achievement this narrative has spent so long describing — gone, beneath water that covered even the highest ground that world had.

What that was like from inside a sealed wooden vessel with no way to see out except one window set high above the waterline is close to unimaginable, and this narrative will not pretend to render it more precisely than honesty allows. The sound alone. Water against timber on every side, for a hundred and fifty days before the waters even began to abate. No solid ground anywhere beneath them. The ordinary rhythms of a life lived on fixed land entirely suspended, for a family that had never in their lives been anywhere but on it.

And then the turning point of the whole account, in four words:

> **Genesis 8:1** *And God remembered Noah…*

Not because He had ever forgotten. The phrase marks the exact moment mercy began, visibly, to act. A wind made to pass over the earth. The fountains of the deep and the windows of heaven stopped. The water beginning, slowly, to go down.

XXI. Ararat

The ark came to rest on the seventeenth day of the seventh month, upon the mountains of Ararat — the text recording the date with a precision that reads less like legend and more like the kind of day a family simply does not forget.

And then the waiting, which may have been the hardest part of the whole ordeal. Two and a half more months before even the tops of other mountains became visible around them. Forty more days after that before Noah opened the window he had built and sent out a raven, which went to and fro and did not come back — finding, presumably, enough floating wreckage to perch on without needing the ark at all.

Then a dove. She found no rest for the sole of her foot, and came back to him — and Noah put forth his hand, and took her, and pulled her in to himself. Of all the gestures recorded in this account, that one is the tenderest, and it is recorded for no reason except that it happened.

Seven days. The dove again. And this time she came back in the evening with an olive leaf, plucked off, in her mouth — the single most quietly hopeful image in the whole account. Proof, before any of them could see it with their own eyes, that somewhere beneath the retreating water, life had already begun again.

Seven more days, and the dove did not return at all.

And at last, on the first day of the first month of Noah's six hundred and first year, Noah removed the covering of the ark and looked, and the face of the ground was dry.

They did not leave even then. Nearly two more months passed — the earth drying, the family waiting inside a vessel that had been their whole world for over a year — until God's own word finally came: *Go forth of the ark.*

They came out onto ground none of them had stood on in more than a year, into a world that must have looked, in that first unshielded daylight, almost unrecognizable from the one they had watched disappear. A landscape reshaped. Old familiar hills and rivers gone or transformed. Mountains standing where the pre-Flood world, on the reading this study has already defended, had known a gentler and flatter horizon — the very tectonic violence that had opened the fountains of the deep now visible everywhere as the permanent, reshaped face of the only world any of them would ever live in again.

XXII. An Altar, and a Bow in the Cloud

The very first thing Noah did, before a shelter was raised or a field cleared, was build an altar.

He took of every clean beast and of every clean fowl and offered burnt offerings on it — the same instruction God had acted out in skins at the edge of a garden sixteen centuries before, carried faithfully through the whole long memory of Seth's line and offered now, on the first morning of a new world, by the only family left to offer it.

> **Genesis 8:21** *And the LORD smelled a sweet savour; and the LORD said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake; for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth… 8:22 While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.*

Read what is actually being said there. Not *because* man has improved — He says the opposite in the same breath. The imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth, and the promise is made anyway. That is the whole character of the God this study has been describing since its first page.

And the rhythm He promised not to break is the same rhythm day four installed in the sun and moon at the very beginning of this story. Seedtime and harvest. Cold and heat. Summer and winter. Day and night. The instrument still running.

Some things were new, and they are worth naming, because the world on this side of the water was not the world on the other side of it. The fear of man was now upon every beast of the earth and every fowl of the air — the calm, unafraid animals of Eden, and of the world just drowned, would not be the animals of the world to come. And the diet changed: *every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things*. The herbivorous assignment of Genesis 1:30 had held from creation to the Flood. It did not hold after.

And then, so the promise could never be mistaken or forgotten, a sign — set in the very thing that had just destroyed the world:

> **Genesis 9:13** *I do set my bow in the cloud, and it shall be a token of a covenant between me and the earth.*

Clouds, which on this study's reading had never produced rain until the Flood began a year before, now carried the sign that they never again would produce a flood to destroy all flesh.

XXIII. Beginning Again

What came after is, in its own quieter way, as remarkable as everything before it.

Eight people, standing in a reshaped and half-familiar world, with the animals and whatever had survived the year aboard the ark, beginning from nothing to rebuild.

Ground to be broken and planted — though the mist that had once watered it gently and evenly may itself have been among the things the Flood's violence permanently ended, leaving this newly emerged world to depend, for the first time in its history, on rain. Shelter to be raised. A household, soon three households, as Shem, Ham, and Japheth began the work of filling an emptied earth exactly as they had been commanded: *be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth.*

And everything Noah himself carried forward out of a world that no longer existed to be taught: the naming, the tending, the altar, the memory. A memory that reached back — through Methuselah's six hundred years of personal acquaintance with him, and through the generations before that — very nearly to Adam's own voice, describing a garden none of the eight of them, nor any living soul after them, would ever see.

That is where this narrative sets its pen down. Not because the story is finished, but because everything that follows belongs to chapters this study has not yet written. A new world, reshaped by the very judgment that cleared it, standing under a bow it had never needed before, being rebuilt by eight people carrying in their own memories — and in their children's — the last living thread back to a garden, a curse, a flood, and a promise that none of it would ever be lost.

Weighing it: Narrative — carries no weight of its own on any contested claim. Every event, name and date comes from Genesis 2-9. Where the story rests on a contested claim — Adam's spirit, the sons of God, the rainless centuries — it carries the weight given in the note on that claim, and no more. Sensory detail is a storyteller's licence, bounded by the text.

In Short

This chapter tells the first sixteen centuries as one story: a man formed and taught by God, a garden, a fall, a promise, two brothers, a city and a forge, long overlapping lives, a violent world, and one family carried through the Flood to begin again under a rainbow. It adds no new argument; it shows what the arguments of Chapters One and Two-A look like lived.

Chapter Three — "Six Thousand Years Since Eden"

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

Every argument this study has made so far — the ordinary days of Chapter One, the abundant, rebellious centuries of Chapter Two-A — rests on a claim this chapter now has to defend directly: that all of it happened recently enough to be counted, generation by generation, rather than lost in an unmeasured haze of deep time. This is the chapter where this study shows its own math, rather than simply asserting a number and moving on.

I. What Scripture Actually Dates — and What It Does Not

Here is a distinction worth making carefully, because getting it wrong in either direction causes real problems. Scripture does not state the age of the earth itself. Genesis 1:1 — *"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth"* — does not come stamped with a date, and this study is not going to claim it does. What scripture *does* give, with real chronological precision, is the span of time from Adam's own life — and more specifically, on the working position of the companion study *The Age of the Earth*, from Adam's expulsion from Eden — down to figures whose dates can be cross-checked against secular history: Abraham, the Exodus, the kings of Israel, and eventually events datable against Babylonian, Persian, and Roman records with real confidence.

That span, reckoned by the plain genealogical record, comes to roughly six thousand years. This chapter's title says "since Eden," deliberately, rather than "since creation" — a distinction the companion study *The Age of the Earth* works out in careful detail, and which this study inherits rather than re-derives.[1] The point worth carrying forward here is simply this: this study is not claiming the universe is six thousand years old. It is claiming that the record of human history, from Adam's own generation forward, covers roughly that span — a claim the genealogies themselves make directly, and a claim this chapter now shows the arithmetic for.

Weighing it: Direct statement — scripture dates human history from Adam, not the age of the earth. The distinction is the study's own and cuts against overclaiming. The companion study's choice of Adam's expulsion as the starting point is a working position, not a text.

II. The Genealogical Math

Genesis five lists ten generations from Adam to Noah, each entry following the same fixed formula: the father's age when the named son was born, the years he lived afterward, and his total lifespan. This is not vague, legendary "in those days" language — it is dated, arithmetic genealogy, the same kind of record-keeping a census or a royal chronicle uses, and it adds up directly: Adam to the Flood spans 1,656 years on the Masoretic Hebrew text's own numbers.

Genesis eleven, verses ten through twenty-six, continues the same formula from Shem, Noah's son, down to Abraham — another span that adds, directly from the text, to roughly three hundred to three hundred and fifty more years, depending on how Terah's age at Abram's birth is read (Genesis 11:26 with 11:32 and Acts 7:4). From Abraham, scripture's own chronological markers continue: Exodus 12:40 dates the sojourn in Egypt at 430 years; 1 Kings 6:1 dates the Exodus itself to 480 years before the fourth year of Solomon's reign, a date fixable against secular Near Eastern chronology with reasonable confidence. From Solomon forward, the regnal years of the kings of Israel and Judah, cross-checked against Assyrian and Babylonian records that name several of those same kings directly, carry the chronology into the well-attested historical record shared by secular and biblical sources alike.

Chain all of it together — Adam to the Flood, the Flood to Abraham, Abraham to the Exodus, the Exodus to Solomon, Solomon to the Babylonian exile and beyond — and the total comes out, independent of any modern young-earth ministry's own calculation, to a span reckoned in the thousands of years, not the millions. The companion study *The Age of the Earth* walks this same math in full section-by-section detail, cross-checks it against five independently-built chronological systems, and resolves the points where those systems genuinely diverge (chiefly the exact Exodus date). That fuller treatment is not repeated here — this chapter states the conclusion and the method plainly, and directs a reader who wants the complete cross-checked arithmetic to that study.[2]

Weighing it: Strong inference — for claim Y: the Genesis 5 and 11 genealogies add up to about six thousand years since Adam. The numbers are in the text, and each generation gives the father's age at the son's birth, which makes gaps hard to insert. The opposing reading fairly answers that "begat" can skip generations in other genealogies (Matthew 1:8 omits three kings), that the Greek Septuagint gives larger numbers, and that the Exodus date is itself disputed; those change the total by centuries, not millions of years.

III. Not a Fringe Calculation — a Historically Mainstream One

Here is a detail worth a modern reader sitting with, because it cuts directly against the common assumption that a young earth is a modern, marginal position invented to resist modern science. It is the opposite. The Protestant Reformers held the same figure. Martin Luther drew up his own chronology of the world (1541), placing creation about 3960 B.C., and John Calvin wrote that the world had not yet reached six thousand years — the same "about six thousand years" this study defends today. Archbishop James Ussher's famous 4004 B.C. date, reached in the 1650s and often mocked today as a naive guess, was in fact reached through rigorous cross-referencing of the biblical genealogies against secular Chaldean and Persian chronology — a serious scholarly undertaking for its time, not a proof-text count, and a figure modern scholars, including historian of science Stephen Jay Gould, have reassessed with more respect than the popular caricature usually allows.[3]

For most of church history — from the apostles to the late 1700s — some version of this genealogical, thousands-of-years chronology was the prevailing reading of Genesis across Jewish and Christian scholarship alike, even among writers such as Augustine who read the six days themselves in a non-literal way. The deep-time framework did not exist yet to be argued against. It is worth a reader knowing that plainly: this study's position is not the new, embattled minority view straining against two thousand years of settled scientific consensus. For most of those two thousand years, it *was* the consensus — until, as Chapter One's opening section already documented in full, James Hutton and Charles Lyell proposed something new, within the last two hundred and fifty years.

Weighing it: Corroboration only — for claim Y: a thousands-of-years chronology was the prevailing Christian reading for most of church history. The history is documented, but a view's age does not make it true, and an old-earth reader fairly answers that earlier Christians had no geological evidence to weigh. Earlier versions said Luther and Calvin "independently computed" dates; that has been corrected.

IV. Why This Study Does Not Treat Radiometric Dating as a Neutral Referee

A fair reader is entitled to ask: what about the rock itself? Radiometric dating methods routinely return ages in the millions or billions of years for the same rocks this study reads as, at most, a few thousand years old. This study does not dismiss that question, and it does not pretend the disagreement is imaginary.

What this study does say is that radiometric dating is not the assumption-free measurement it is often presented as being. Every radiometric method rests on three assumptions that cannot be directly observed for the unwitnessed past: that the starting quantities of parent and daughter isotopes are known, that no contamination or leaching occurred over the sample's history, and — the largest assumption — that the decay rate has remained perfectly constant across the entire span being measured. Those assumptions can be, and have been, tested directly, by applying the same dating methods to rock of *known* historical age: potassium-argon dating of the 1801 Hualalai lava flow in Hawaii — an eruption with a documented, witnessed date less than two hundred years old — returned

ages of 1.44 to 1.76 million years. The 1980 Mount St. Helens dacite, from an eruption within living memory, returned 300,000 to 400,000 years. Historical lava flows from Mount Etna returned figures in the hundreds of thousands of years.[4] A method that returns wrong answers, by orders of magnitude, on rock of directly known age is a method this study does not treat as a neutral referee capable of overturning the genealogical chronology laid out above — not because this study is unwilling to look at the evidence, but because it has looked, and found the method's own foundational assumptions wanting on exactly the cases where they can actually be checked.

The mainstream answer to these cases deserves to be stated at full strength, because it is a real answer. Geologists reply that potassium-argon dating is not used on very young volcanic rock precisely because it cannot resolve a few hundred years; that these lavas carried older crystals and "excess" argon up from depth, so the method was misapplied rather than falsified; and that ages are trusted only when independent methods — different parent isotopes, isochron techniques, counted layers — agree with one another, as they commonly do in the rocks used to build the geological time scale. Creation researchers answer in turn that if hidden inherited argon can make a young rock look old, no one can be sure the same is not true of a rock whose true age is unknown — and the RATE research project argued that the agreement between methods may itself reflect faster decay in the past, a proposal its own authors acknowledge leaves an unsolved problem of how the resulting heat was removed. This study names both sides so a reader can see exactly where the disagreement lies.

This study names honestly, as it has throughout, that not every young-earth scientific argument is equally strong — the distant-starlight problem, in particular, remains a genuinely unresolved question even within young-earth cosmology itself, and this study is not going to pretend otherwise. But the specific claim this chapter is defending — that the earth's actual, lived human history reaches back roughly six thousand years, not billions — rests on a chain of direct, textual, arithmetic genealogy this study finds considerably more solid than the deep-time framework it displaces, a framework this study has argued is historically recent and, on the known-age tests, open to more question than it is usually granted.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim Y: radiometric dating is not an assumption-free referee. The known-age cases are real results, and the assumptions are real assumptions. But the mainstream answer — excess argon, the unsuitability of K-Ar for young lava, and agreement between independent methods — is serious, and this study states it at full strength. The known-age cases show that the method can mislead when misapplied; whether it misleads on the rocks that set the geological time scale is exactly what is in dispute.

V. Written in Our Own DNA: The Y-Chromosome Case for a Recent Common Ancestry

Every argument so far in this chapter has come from outside the human body — genealogical records, historical chronology, the physics of decay rates in rock. This section turns to a different, and in some ways more startling, kind of evidence: what the DNA carried in every living person's own cells says about how recently all of humanity shares common ancestors. This is modern, active, independently-pursued research, not a repackaging of Ussher's arithmetic — and it deserves to be presented completely enough that a reader can weigh its actual strength, not merely be told it exists.

The method, stated precisely. Every DNA molecular clock works the same basic way: measure how many new mutations appear per generation, then divide the total genetic difference between any two people, or any two populations, by that per-generation rate to estimate how many generations separate

them. The dispute that decides everything downstream of it is *how the per-generation rate itself gets measured*. Mainstream population genetics has traditionally calibrated it indirectly — a "long-term substitution rate," back-calculated by comparing human DNA to chimpanzee DNA and dividing the accumulated differences by an assumed multi-million-year divergence time. Dr. Nathaniel Jeanson — a Harvard-trained cell and developmental biologist working with Answers in Genesis — argues for measuring it the other way: directly. Sequence real parents and their real children, and count the new mutations that actually appear, generation to generation, in front of the researcher, with no assumption about deep time built into the count at all.

What the direct measurement shows. Applied to the Y chromosome (passed father to son, unmixed, generation after generation) and to mitochondrial DNA (passed mother to child the same way), Jeanson's pedigree-based rate comes out fast — fast enough that the accumulated genetic differences among all living men alive today resolve, on this measurement, into a family tree matching almost exactly what Genesis 10's Table of Nations describes: three major branches, corresponding to Noah's three sons Shem, Ham, and Japheth, on a timescale Jeanson dates to roughly 4,500 years — squarely inside this chapter's own post-Flood chronology — with the whole male tree rooted, on this measurement, in a single founding male at about that date: Noah, on Jeanson's reading. Related creationist work on mitochondrial DNA, passed mother to child, reports a single founding mother on a timescale of roughly six thousand years, matching creation itself. In his 2022 popular work *Traced: Human DNA's Big Surprise*, Jeanson reports tracing his own personal Y-chromosome line back to Joktan, a great-great-grandson of Shem named directly in Genesis 10:25 — not a metaphor, but a specific, testable genealogical claim about one named man's own DNA.

Extended to whole peoples, not just one lineage. Jeanson's more recent work pushes the same method further, arguing it can resolve not just the top-level three-way branching but *which* specific line of Noah's descendants specific modern peoples come from, and roughly when their ancestors' migrations happened. Applied to Native American populations specifically (in the 2025 book *They Had Names*), AiG's own published material traces Native American ancestry to two lines — Ham's line through Cush, and Shem's line through one of Joktan's own thirteen sons — describing what AiG calls "a mirror image of the Genesis 10 genealogy" recovered directly from DNA, cross-checked against a documented series of genetic migration waves into the Americas from Asia, all falling within the same post-Flood, post-Babel timeframe this chapter has already defended from the text alone. The same broader method is applied to Old World populations across Europe, Asia, and Africa, tracing the post-Babel dispersion of Genesis 10 and 11 through DNA correlated against archaeology and linguistics.

Why this matters for the argument this chapter is making. If Jeanson's reading holds, it is a striking form of corroboration, because it comes from a completely different kind of evidence than everything else in this chapter — not ancient genealogical records copied by scribes, not the assumption-laden physics of radioactive decay, but the DNA sitting in the cells of every living person reading this sentence right now, independently resolving into the same approximately six-thousand-year, three-branches-from-one-family shape the book of Genesis has claimed all along. A skeptical reader who doubts ancient manuscripts can still, on this argument, check their own DNA against a living, present-tense measurement and find it pointing to the same place scripture already pointed.

Stated honestly, as this study has named every other live dispute. This specific scientific claim is genuinely, technically contested — more sharply contested, in fact, than most of the other scientific corroboration cited in this study, and it would be dishonest to present it as uncontroversial. The core of the dispute is exactly where Jeanson's own method departs from the mainstream: large, high-quality parent-child DNA sequencing studies ("trio" studies, covering the whole genome at high accuracy)

consistently measure roughly 50-100 new mutations per generation — a rate statistically consistent with the old, long-term substitution rate, not the much faster rate Jeanson reports. Critics argue Jeanson's faster figure comes from a smaller set of lower-quality, higher-error Y-chromosome and mitochondrial studies, and that no secular lab measuring human mutation rates for unrelated medical or forensic purposes — with no stake whatsoever in the creation debate — has independently reproduced his faster rate. A further specific, technical objection has been raised directly against the newer migration-dating work: that it treats genealogy (one family's line of descent) and phylogeny (a whole population's evolutionary history) as interchangeable, when population geneticists treat them as analytically distinct. This study names that dispute plainly rather than hiding it, the same way it has named the distant-starlight problem, the ice-core dispute, and every other genuinely open scientific question along the way — and, per the governing standard this whole study follows, a specific, contested technical claim being disputed in the literature is not the same thing as this study's own scriptural conclusion being in doubt. What the genetics argument adds, even held at that honest, contested weight, is a second, independent, modern line of evidence converging on the same recent, Genesis-10-shaped human family tree this chapter has already defended from the text and from history alone — not proof beyond all dispute, but real, current, actively-published research pointing the same direction scripture has pointed for thirty-five hundred years.

Source note: this section draws on Jeanson and Holland's 2019 paper in Answers Research Journal, *Jeanson's books* Traced *(2022) and* They Had Names *(2025), and the published critiques of both, including geneticist Dan Stern Cardinale's. Full references are in the Sources & Notes for this chapter.*

Weighing it: Corroboration only — for claim Y: Jeanson's DNA work points to a recent, Genesis-10-shaped human family. It is striking if it holds, and it is independent of the text. But it rests on a mutation rate that large, high-quality whole-genome studies do not reproduce, and it treats genealogy and population history as interchangeable in ways population geneticists dispute. It may be stated; this study does not lean on it. Earlier versions placed "Y-chromosome Adam" at about 6,000 years and called Joktan a great-grandson of Shem; both are corrected.

Closing

This chapter has done the one piece of homework the first two chapters assumed rather than proved: it has shown, from the text's own arithmetic, from the documented history of where the alternative framework actually came from, and now from a modern, independent line of evidence written into human DNA itself, why this study reads Genesis 1 through 11 as real, datable, recent history rather than as a poetic gesture toward an unmeasured deep past. With that foundation now stated plainly, this study is ready to turn, in the chapters ahead, to the event that actually separates the world Chapters One and Two described from the world you live in now: the Flood that reshaped a planet's geology, its climate, and its future, in a matter of months rather than ages.

Weighing it: Summary — restates the chapter; adds no weight of its own.

In Short

Scripture does not date the earth, but it does date human history, and its genealogies add up to about six thousand years since Adam — the figure most Christians held until the late 1700s. This study does not treat radiometric dating as a neutral referee, and it sets out the mainstream answer at full strength. The DNA work of Nathaniel Jeanson points the same way, but it is disputed and is held as corroboration only.

Chapter Four — "The Flood That Reshaped the World"

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

Chapter Two-B has already shown what the Flood felt like from inside it. This chapter asks a harder, more mechanical question: what actually happened, physically, to a planet, to produce an event of that scale — and is there any real reason, beyond the text itself, to think a global flood is physically plausible at all? A fair reader is owed a real answer, not a wave in the general direction of miracle.

I. Not Local, and Not Symbolic — What the Text Itself Claims

Before the mechanism, the scope. Genesis 6 through 9 does not describe a bad flood season on one river. Its own vocabulary is deliberately, repeatedly universal:

> **Genesis 7:19-20** *And the waters prevailed exceedingly upon the earth; and all the high hills, that were under the whole heaven, were covered. Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the mountains were covered.*

"All the high hills, that were under the whole heaven" is not the language a Hebrew writer reaches for to describe a regional inundation — scripture has other, narrower vocabulary available for that, and does not use it here. The New Testament writers who look back on this event treat it the same way: as real, global, and historical, not legendary or merely local.

> **2 Peter 3:5-6** *For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.*
>
> **Matthew 24:38-39** *For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.*

Jesus Himself treats Noah's Flood as a real, datable, past event, used as the direct comparison for His own future return — a comparison that carries no force at all if the Flood itself were legendary rather than historical.[1]

Weighing it: Strong inference — for claim F: the text describes a global Flood. "All the high hills, that were under the whole heaven" and the New Testament's treatment of the Flood as universal judgment are hard to read as regional. The local-flood reading fairly answers that "all the earth" can mean the known land (Genesis 41:57), and that the Hebrew *erets* often means a land, not the planet.

II. The Fountains of the Great Deep — the Mechanism, in Full

Chapter One, Section VI, already introduced this briefly. It belongs here in full, because the mechanism is the actual engine of everything the rest of this chapter and the next two describe.

> **Genesis 7:11** *In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened.*

Two sources, named separately, and named in this order for a reason: the fountains of the great deep are listed *before* the forty days of rain, and the volume of water implied by rain alone — even extraordinary, sustained rain — falls well short of what a global flood requires. The Hebrew verb behind "broken up," *nivke'u*, describes violent structural rupture, not gentle seepage — the same verb family used of the sea splitting at the Exodus and the earth opening to swallow Korah.

The creation-science model most directly engaging this mechanism, catastrophic plate tectonics, proposes that the pre-Flood earth's crust contained vast subterranean water reservoirs, and that a triggering event — runaway subduction, in which cooling, increasingly dense oceanic crust began sinking into the mantle at a rapidly accelerating rate, dragging the surrounding ocean floor with it — tore open the boundary between those subterranean waters and the surface in a catastrophic chain reaction across the whole globe within a single year, simultaneously releasing enormous volumes of water and pressure-driven steam (plausibly supplying the mechanical source of the sustained, intense rain of the same forty days) while violently reshaping the ocean floor and continental margins.[2] Answers in Genesis, which has published this model most extensively, frames it consistently as a working model rather than settled fact — its own article titles ask "Can Catastrophic Plate Tectonics Explain Flood Geology?" rather than asserting it outright — and this study follows that same honest framing rather than overselling the mechanism's certainty.[3]

A serious, direct critique of this specific model exists from outside young-earth circles and deserves to be named rather than hidden: geologists writing from an old-earth but still Bible-believing position have argued the catastrophic-tectonics model requires physically implausible rates of heat dissipation and crustal movement even under its own proposed mechanism, a technical objection this study logs honestly without treating it as settled either way.[4] What this study does hold as settled is the text's own claim — a real, global, catastrophic hydrological event, with two named physical sources — while treating the specific tectonic mechanism proposed to explain it as the best currently-available model, not an item of faith in its own right.

Weighing it: Direct statement for the rupture; working model for the mechanism — for claim F. That the fountains of the deep were "broken up" is in the text. Catastrophic plate tectonics is a model its own advocates present as open, and critics, including old-earth Christian geologists, fairly answer that it requires rates of plate motion and heat loss no known physics supplies.

III. Why the Flood Did Not Need to Bury Today's Everest

A question a careful reader is right to ask, and one this study will not dodge: if Mount Everest stands nearly twenty-nine thousand feet today, wouldn't a global Flood need to be that deep everywhere, which seems physically extreme even granting a miracle?

The answer, already introduced in Chapter One, is that it would not — because the world the Flood covered was not the world we live on now. This study has already followed Answers in Genesis's reading

of Psalm 104:6-9 as describing Flood-recessional tectonics rather than the third day of creation, the position that the pre-Flood earth had a substantially flatter topography: no continental-scale mountain ranges yet thrust up by the very violence the Flood itself was about to unleash.[5] A global Flood covering "all the high hills, that were under the whole heaven" (Genesis 7:19) on a flatter pre-Flood world is describing a genuinely global event without requiring the kind of water column that would seem almost impossible to credit on today's far more dramatic terrain.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claims F and P: a flatter pre-Flood world needed less water to cover it. It follows if the mountains rose during and after the Flood, which is the model's claim. It rests on the Psalm 104 reading weighed in Chapter One §VII.

IV. Where the Water Went

Genesis 8:3 states plainly that the waters "returned from off the earth continually," and Psalm 104 — on the Flood-recessional reading just defended — states the mechanism directly:

> **Psalm 104:8** *They go up by the mountains; they go down by the valleys unto the place which thou hast founded for them.*

The water did not vanish. It went where newly-deepened ocean basins now had room for it, as the same tectonic violence that had opened the fountains of the deep thrust up new mountain ranges while driving the ocean floor correspondingly downward. Today's oceans, on this model, are deep enough by a wide margin to cover the entire globe if the earth's surface were smoothed flat — which is why a flatter pre-Flood world could be entirely submerged by water that, once the mountains rose and the ocean basins deepened, drained away permanently into basins now more than large enough to hold it, exactly as the rainbow covenant of Genesis 9:11 promises will never again be exceeded.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim F: the water drained into deepened ocean basins. That today's oceans would cover a smoothed earth is a standard calculation. That the basins deepened in the Flood's aftermath is part of the model and carries its weight.

Closing

This chapter has done what Chapter One's Section VI only began: traced the Flood's own claimed mechanism from rupture to recession, named the model that best explains it, and named honestly where that model is still disputed, even among Bible-believing scholars. Chapter Five turns from the water itself to what it left behind — the rock layers, canyons, and fossil beds that, on this study's reading, are not the product of ages of gradual accumulation, but of this single, catastrophic year.

Weighing it: Summary — restates the chapter; adds no weight of its own.

In Short

Genesis describes a global Flood, and Jesus and Peter treat it as real history. Its two named sources — the deep broken open and the windows of heaven — fit the creationist model of catastrophic plate tectonics, which even its advocates call a working model, and which critics dispute. On that model the mountains rose and the ocean basins sank as the waters drained, which is why the Flood never needed to bury today's Everest.

Chapter Five — “Rock Layers in Weeks, Not Eons”

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

Drive through any canyon country and the rock itself seems to argue for deep time before a single word is spoken — layer upon layer, each one, the standard account says, representing thousands or millions of years of patient, gradual accumulation. Millions of visitors a year stand at the rim of the Grand Canyon and are told, by the placards at their elbow, that they are looking at roughly two billion years of earth history stacked in front of them like the pages of a book. This chapter asks a direct question of that book: does the rock itself actually read that way, once it is examined closely rather than assumed at a glance — or does the same rock, tested layer by layer, fold by fold, and contact by contact, point instead to a single, violent, catastrophic year? This study’s answer, laid out below with the actual geological evidence rather than a bare assertion, is that the rock fits the way Genesis describes far better than it is usually given credit for: fast, catastrophic, and total. The lines of evidence in this chapter — the sharp contacts, the folded-while-soft rock, the scarcity of old land surfaces, the lake that may have broken through a mountain wall — point the same direction, and this chapter means to show that plainly enough that the standard “millions of years” reading has to answer for all of it at once, not explain each piece away one at a time in isolation.

I. An Observed, Real-Time Analog: Mount St. Helens

The strongest evidence in this chapter is not a theory. It is something that happened within living memory, filmed, measured, and studied by secular geologists with no stake whatsoever in the creation debate.

When Mount St. Helens erupted on May 18, 1980, and in the eruptions that followed, the volcano did not need thousands of years to lay down layered strata or carve a canyon. On June 12, 1980, a single pyroclastic-flow event deposited up to twenty-five feet of finely layered strata in a matter of hours — thin laminae and beds of the kind textbooks often describe as requiring slow, quiet, year-by-year accumulation, each produced here by a pulse of moving sediment rather than by a year.[1] Then, on March 19, 1982, a small eruption melted the crater’s snowpack and sent a mudflow down the mountain that cut a canyon system up to about a hundred and forty feet deep through the fresh deposits in a single day — nicknamed the “Little Grand Canyon of the Toutle River” by creation geologist Steven Austin, at roughly one-fortieth the scale of the real one. This is not a hypothesis about what catastrophic deposition and erosion *could* do. It is a directly observed, measured, photographed demonstration of what they *did* do, recently, at a scale small enough to study completely.

It is worth being exact about what these two events show and what they do not. They show that layered rock does not need a year per layer, and that a canyon can be cut through soft, freshly laid sediment in a day. They do not, on their own, show that the Grand Canyon’s hard rock was laid down or cut the same way, and mainstream geologists — who do not dispute the Mount St. Helens observations at all — point out that loose volcanic deposits erode far faster than hardened sandstone and limestone. (Earlier versions of this study described the 1982 canyon as cut by the breach of a dammed Spirit Lake; it was

cut by a mudflow, and that description is withdrawn.) The question is whether the same kind of process, at a much larger scale, explains the larger features, and that is what the rest of this chapter weighs.

Weighing it: Strong inference — for claim F: layered rock and canyons can form in hours to days. Mount St. Helens showed both, and mainstream geologists do not dispute the observations. They fairly answer that loose volcanic ash is not hardened sandstone and limestone, so the analog proves the possibility, not the Grand Canyon's history. Earlier versions described the 1982 canyon as cut by a Spirit Lake dam breach; it was cut by a mudflow, and the claim is withdrawn.

II. The Grand Canyon's Own Rock Tested Directly

Set the theory aside for a moment and look only at what geologists — young-earth and mainstream alike — actually find when they test the rock itself, layer by layer.

The layers are flat, not deformed by age. Across nearly the entire visible sequence of the canyon's walls, the sedimentary layers lie essentially flat and parallel over enormous horizontal distances, tens of miles in some cases, with none of the folding, faulting, or localized thickness variation that hundreds of millions of years of tectonic activity, erosion, and redeposition would be expected to introduce into layers laid down that slowly. Layers this flat, this continuous, and this uniform in thickness across such distances are the signature of a single, sustained depositional event moving as a broad sheet across the landscape — precisely what a continent-covering Flood would produce, and not obviously what "one layer per epoch, deposited independently over millions of years" would be expected to leave behind.

The contacts between layers are sharp, not eroded. Where one layer ends and the next begins, the boundary is typically a flat, sharp contact, most often with no soil horizon, no root traces, no weathering rind, and little sign of erosional channeling into the surface below before the next layer was laid on top of it.[2] If the standard timeline is correct, each of these boundaries represents an ordinary land surface exposed to open air, rain, wind, and plant growth for periods ranging from thousands to tens of millions of years before the next layer buried it — and land surfaces exposed that long leave unmistakable marks: soil, roots, burrows, weathering. Creation geologists report that the Grand Canyon's major contacts show very little of it, which is the signature of one layer being laid directly on top of the previous one while both were still fresh, wet sediment — a signature entirely consistent with continuous, rapid deposition and difficult to reconcile with repeated, vast gaps in time.

The cross-bedding in the Coconino Sandstone points to water, not desert wind, at high speed. The Coconino Sandstone, one of the canyon's most prominent upper layers, is conventionally read as a fossilized desert dune field. Its internal cross-bedding — the diagonal layering inside what look like ancient sand dunes — has been measured by creationist researchers at angles and grain-packing characteristics that match underwater sand dunes formed by fast-moving water far better than they match wind-blown desert dunes, and vertebrate trackways preserved in the same layer show gait patterns consistent with animals struggling against a current of moving water rather than walking across dry desert sand.[3] On this reading, one of the canyon's supposedly clearest "desert epoch" layers turns out to be fast-moving underwater sediment instead — evidence for the Flood's own currents, not against them.

Few soils, and few old land surfaces, in the sequence. Across thousands of feet of vertical rock, representing — on the standard reading — hundreds of millions of years during which the region was repeatedly exposed as dry land, creation geologists point out how rarely the sequence preserves what long-exposed land surfaces ordinarily leave behind: deep fossil soils, root systems reaching down from a former surface, and deep erosional valleys. Mainstream geologists answer that the record is not as

empty as that — the canyon's rocks do preserve burrows and trails, mud cracks and raindrop impressions, channels cut into the layer below (the Temple Butte Formation filling channels in the Muav Limestone, for example), and an ancient cave-and-sinkhole surface at the top of the Redwall Limestone. Both sides agree on what is there; they disagree on whether it is enough to account for the vast spans of time the standard reading assigns to the gaps.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim F: the Grand Canyon's flat layers and sharp contacts suggest continuous, rapid deposition. The flat, extensive layers and the sharp contacts are real. Mainstream geologists fairly answer that the sequence does record exposed land surfaces — burrows, mud cracks, raindrop marks, channels, and ancient karst — and that the Colorado Plateau's stability explains the flatness. Earlier versions said there were no soils, burrows or channels "anywhere" in the sequence; that overstated the case and is withdrawn. The Coconino cross-bedding argument is disputed on its own ground and is held as **corroboration only**.

III. The Rock That Folded Like Dough, Not Like Stone

Creationist geologists have identified something even more striking than flat, sharp-contacted layers: rock that has been folded — bent through dramatic angles, in some places nearly ninety degrees — without a single crack, fracture, or break anywhere in the fold.

The clearest documented case is the Carbon Canyon Fold in the eastern Grand Canyon, where a section of the Tapeats Sandstone, a formation conventionally dated at roughly 507 to 508 million years old, has been bent through approximately ninety degrees immediately adjacent to the Butte Fault.[4] Rock that has already hardened into stone does not fold this way; it fractures, shatters, and breaks along clean fault lines, the way a dropped dinner plate breaks rather than bends. Sandstone that folds through ninety degrees without a single fracture has to have still been soft, wet, unlithified sediment — closer to damp sand than to stone — at the moment it was bent.

Detailed microscopic analysis of the fold supports this directly. Researchers examining thin sections of the folded sandstone found none of the deformation lamellae or kink bands that quartz grains show when hard rock is bent under stress, and found the quartz cement holding the sand grains together still pristine, with sharp crystal faces intact and undisrupted — the signature of cementation (the chemical process that hardens loose sand into solid sandstone) happening only *after* the folding took place, not before it.[5] That sequence — soft sand folded first, hardened into stone only afterward — creates a genuine timing problem for the standard chronology. If the Tapeats Sandstone was truly deposited 507 to 508 million years ago and the folding it now shows happened much later, during a mountain-building episode tens or hundreds of millions of years afterward, the sand would have had to remain soft, wet, and unlithified for that entire intervening span — which is not how sandstone behaves. Sand this deeply buried under this much accumulated overlying rock cements into hard stone within a comparatively short span, not across hundreds of millions of years of continued softness. Read instead as sediment folded within about a year of its own deposition — while it was still wet from the Flood that laid it down, and before it had time to harden — the same evidence requires no such implausible span of continued softness at all.

This study names honestly, as it has throughout, that this specific line of evidence is directly disputed. A detailed critical review of the Carbon Canyon Fold and the broader Tonto Group deformation has argued the opposite reading of the same rock: that the fold's relatively planar limbs and sharp hinges, its extensive internal fracturing, and calcite twinning patterns within it are themselves signatures of *already-lithified*, hard rock bending under slow tectonic stress, not soft sediment folding quickly — and

that the timeline the young-earth reading requires leaves too little room for both the lithification and the later erosion the canyon clearly also shows.[6] This study logs that critique directly rather than pretending the matter is closed, while still finding the combination of the pristine, undisrupted cement crystals and the total absence of ductile deformation markers in the quartz grains difficult to square with a fold that happened long after the rock had already hardened.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim F: the Carbon Canyon fold bent while still soft. Snelling's pristine cement and missing strain features support soft-sediment folding. The published critique fairly answers that fractures and calcite twinning in the fold point to hard rock bent slowly. Both sides are examining the same outcrop; the study finds the soft-sediment reading more natural and names the dispute.

IV. Carved in Weeks: The Breached Lake

The layers are one question. How the canyon itself — the mile-deep gash through those layers that the Colorado River now runs through — was actually cut is a separate one, and it is here that some of the most specific and most recently developed creationist geological research bears directly on the timeline.

East of the Grand Canyon, across what is now northeastern Arizona, geological evidence documents an enormous ancient lake, known to geologists as Hopi Lake (also called, from its rock formation, Lake Bidahochi) — a lake that, on the estimates used in the spillover model, may have covered many thousands of square miles at elevations well above the canyon's present river (estimates of its size and high stand vary widely, and some geologists doubt it was ever a single continuous lake), dammed on its western edge by the Kaibab Upwarp, the very uplift the Colorado River today cuts straight through.[7] Fine-grained lake-bottom sediments of the Bidahochi Formation — light green and brown claystone, volcanic ash layers, and tufa limestone of exactly the kind that only accumulates in standing water rather than a flowing river — are preserved at consistent elevations for many miles east of the present canyon, along with volcanic maars and scoria cones that formed within the lake itself. This is not inference from absence; it is a lake bed, complete with the specific rock types standing water produces, sitting in plain sight at an elevation that requires a large body of standing water to have stood there.

Creationist geologist Steven Austin has argued directly that this lake's catastrophic breach through the Kaibab Upwarp, once the rising water finally overtopped or undermined the barrier holding it back, is what actually carved the Grand Canyon — and that the drainage happened not across millions of years of gradual downcutting, but in a geologically instantaneous event: Austin has argued that catastrophic drainage of a lake of this kind could erode the canyon system within a matter of weeks, pointing to observed analogs rather than speculation alone.[8] One analog is cited most often. Afton Canyon in California's Mojave Desert is widely attributed to the rapid drainage of the Pleistocene Lake Manix when its natural dam breached — a far smaller canyon, carved by the same basic mechanism, that stands today as a directly measurable, walkable demonstration of what a breached lake can do to solid rock in a geologically short span. Neither event — Hopi Lake's proposed breach nor Lake Manix's — requires an appeal to anything outside normal, observable hydrology. They require only that enough water, impounded behind a sufficiently weak barrier, be allowed to break through at once rather than trickle through slowly, and the geological record shows that kind of breach cutting a canyon at Afton, at a much smaller scale.

This study names two honest complications rather than presenting this case as uncontested. First, the lake-spillover model is not the unanimous position even within creationist geology: other creation-science researchers, including some at the Institute for Creation Research, have argued instead that the

canyon was cut directly by the Flood's own receding floodwater following natural fractures and cracks in the freshly deposited sediment, without requiring any intermediate lake at all, and have specifically critiqued the hypothetical lake as an unnecessary complication rather than a needed mechanism — a live, internal disagreement among scientists who agree on the Flood's reality but disagree on this specific downstream mechanism, logged here honestly rather than papered over.[9] Second, the idea of a lake spilling over the Kaibab Upwarp is not only a creationist one: some mainstream geologists have proposed lake overflow as a real factor in the canyon's origin (Meek and Douglass, 2001, among others) — but they place it five to six million years ago, and see it starting a river's downcutting over millions of years, not finishing the canyon in weeks. Others doubt the lake spilled over at all, and a direct, current critical response to the broader body of creationist Grand Canyon claims argues the underlying evidence has been selectively read.[10] What this study holds, weighing both complications honestly, is that the Bidahochi Formation's lake-bed rock is not in dispute — a large lake did stand there — and that a lake of this size, breaching, is a documented, physically ordinary mechanism for rapid canyon-cutting regardless of which precise timeline or which specific water source ultimately carved the Grand Canyon's channel.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim F: a breached lake could have carved the Grand Canyon quickly. That a large lake once stood east of the canyon is supported by the Bidahochi lake beds; its size and high stand are disputed. Lake overflow is also a mainstream hypothesis, but one placed five to six million years ago and followed by long downcutting. Creation geologists themselves disagree, with some preferring direct Flood runoff. Earlier versions gave a precise lake area and elevation, used Spirit Lake as a breach analog, and said mainstream geology rejects spillover "entirely"; all three are corrected.

V. Seeing It Firsthand

This is not evidence that exists only in journal articles. Creationist geologists, Dr. Steven Austin prominent among them, have spent decades in the canyon itself — measuring the fold angles, sampling the contacts, tracing the Bidahochi Formation's lake sediments mile by mile — and have documented that fieldwork on film as well as in print, in resources such as the *Beyond Is Genesis History?* documentary series' own dedicated episode on the Grand Canyon and Dr. Austin's recorded field lectures, walking viewers through the specific outcrops this section has described rather than asking them to take the argument on faith alone.[11] A reader who wants to see the sharp contacts, the folded sandstone, and the Bidahochi lake beds with their own eyes, rather than only read about them, has real, filmed fieldwork available to do exactly that.

Weighing it: Neutral — the fieldwork is available to see, but seeing it settles nothing on its own. Both sides publish photographs of the same outcrops.

VI. Polystrate Fossils

A polystrate fossil is a single fossil — most commonly a tree trunk — that runs vertically through multiple rock strata simultaneously, rather than being confined to one layer. If each stratum genuinely represents a separate span of thousands of years, a single tree trunk spanning several of them at once would have had to remain standing upright, unrotted, exposed to the elements, for that entire combined span while each layer slowly buried it in turn — a scenario every basic principle of wood decomposition makes physically implausible past a matter of years at most. Read instead as the product of rapid, successive burial during a single catastrophic flood event, the same fossils require no such implausibility: the tree is buried, layer after layer, in a compressed span of time consistent with a flood's own rapid, repeated sediment pulses, not with the tree somehow outlasting millennia of exposure while burial slowly caught up to it.[12] It is worth adding that mainstream geologists agree each such tree was

buried quickly — standing fossil forests like those at Joggins, Nova Scotia, are read as trees buried by repeated local floods over years to decades. The disagreement is not whether each tree was buried fast, but whether the whole sequence around it was.

Weighing it: Corroboration only — for claim F: upright trees crossing several layers were buried quickly. Both sides agree each tree was buried fast; mainstream geology reads fossil forests like Joggins as local floods over years to decades. The fossils show rapid burial of the tree, not of the whole sequence.

Closing

None of what this chapter has argued requires abandoning careful observation of the rock record — it requires reading that record against a different clock, and reading it as a whole rather than one convenient piece at a time. Taken individually, a skeptic can offer an alternative explanation for almost any single line of evidence in isolation. Taken together — flat, continuous layers with little sign of the ordinary land-surface weathering that long gaps in time should leave; sharp, unweathered contacts between them; sandstone folded through ninety degrees while it was still soft, with the cement that later hardened it still pristine; a large ancient lake, documented in the rock itself, sitting where a breach mechanism would place it; and a volcano that laid down layers in hours and cut a canyon in a day within living memory — the combined weight is, on this study's reading, harder to explain on the standard slow-and-gradual account than on a single, catastrophic, Flood-driven year. That is the case this chapter set out to make, named honestly alongside its real disputes rather than oversold, and it is the reading this study holds. Chapter Six turns from the rock itself to what may be this study's most immediately relevant question yet: where the coal and oil the modern world runs on actually came from, and how fast it was made.

Weighing it: Summary — restates the chapter; adds no weight of its own.

In Short

Mount St. Helens showed, within living memory, that thick layered rock can form in hours and a canyon can be cut in a day. The Grand Canyon's flat layers, sharp contacts, soft-folded sandstone and ancient lake beds fit a rapid, catastrophic history better than they are usually given credit for. But every one of those lines of evidence is disputed, and some are disputed among creation geologists themselves; the case is a cumulative one, held as a reasonable inference.

Chapter Six — "Coal, Oil, and Fossils — Made Fast"

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

Chapter Two-A closed with a question this chapter now answers directly: where did the staggering biomass buried beneath the modern world's coal seams and oil fields actually come from, and how long did it actually take to become what we now pump and mine? And a second, closely related question

belongs alongside it: when the fossil record itself is examined closely — not just the coal and oil, but the bones — does it actually behave like something tens or hundreds of millions of years old, or like something very much younger?

I. Two Models on the Table

The standard model holds that coal formed from peat — partially decayed plant matter accumulating in swamps — compressed and heated gradually over tens to hundreds of millions of years. The creationist alternative holds that catastrophic burial of enormous floating mats of vegetation, torn loose and transported by Flood-stage waters, followed by rapid coalification under the extreme pressure and heat generated by that same catastrophic burial, can produce coal in a dramatically compressed timeframe — a claim tested in the laboratory and illustrated by a real, observed event.[1]

The laboratory side of the case is straightforward: controlled experiments have produced coal-like material directly from wood in a matter of hours to weeks under sufficient heat, with volcanic clay minerals such as montmorillonite and kaolinite measurably accelerating the process, demonstrating that heat and time can be traded against each other — enough heat compresses what would otherwise take ages into a dramatically shorter span, exactly as ordinary chemistry would predict.[2] The real-world side of the case comes, once again, from Mount St. Helens. The 1980 eruption blasted about a million logs into Spirit Lake, where many still float as a vast mat. Steven Austin, who had studied coal formation for his doctorate, observed that as the logs rub together they shed bark, which sinks and has built up a layer of bark-rich plant debris on the lake floor — debris that, he argues, resembles in its layering and makeup the raw material of some coal seams, laid down in years rather than millennia, and with no roots beneath it.[3] Critics answer, fairly, that this is peat-like debris, not coal, and that no one has watched it become coal. The analog shows how a coal seam's plant material *could* be gathered and laid down quickly; the laboratory work above is what speaks to how fast it becomes coal.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim K: coal can form quickly from buried plant mats. Laboratory work shows heat can turn wood into coal-like material fast, and the Spirit Lake log mat shows plant debris gathering quickly with no roots beneath. Critics fairly answer that laboratory coal is not natural coal and that the Spirit Lake layer is peat-like debris, not coal. Earlier versions described a Mount St. Helens log with "wood on one end and coal on the other"; no documentation for that was found, and the claim is withdrawn.

II. Oil and Natural Gas: The Same Rapid Story, Written in the Rock's Own Chemistry

Coal is not the only fossil fuel this study owes the reader a direct answer on. The oil and natural gas pumped and drilled out of the ground today came, on this study's reading, from the identical source and the identical catastrophic event as the coal just described: the staggering richness of the pre-Flood biosphere Chapter Two-B already put in vivid view, buried essentially all at once rather than accumulated over the tens or hundreds of millions of years the standard petroleum-geology timeline requires.

The standard model holds that oil forms from marine microorganisms and algae, buried in ocean-floor sediment and slowly "cooked" by heat and pressure over millions of years into kerogen and then crude oil — a process called catagenesis. The chemistry of oil itself is where this study finds that timeline difficult to sustain. Crude oil is rich in porphyrins — organic compounds structurally related to chlorophyll (the molecule that makes plants green) and to hemoglobin (the molecule that carries oxygen

in blood) — and porphyrins are chemically fragile: they break down quickly on contact with oxygen. Their presence in oil, preserved intact, requires that the original organic material — the plant and animal matter that became the oil — was cut off from oxidizing conditions essentially immediately after burial, not after the slow, gradual sinking through the water column and seafloor sediment the standard model proposes, which would ordinarily give oxygen ample time to break the porphyrins down before they were ever preserved.[4] Laboratory experiments bear this out directly: porphyrins can be produced from plant chlorophyll in a matter of hours under moderate heating, a controlled demonstration that the chemical transformation this study attributes to catastrophic Flood burial does not require anything close to geological ages to occur — heat substituting for time, exactly as the same laboratory principle showed for coal above.[5] Answers in Genesis and Answers Research Journal present this same reading — vast biomass from a pre-Flood world far richer in plant and animal life than anything the present world has ever matched, buried catastrophically during the Flood and transformed rapidly by heat and pressure into the oil and gas fields drilled today — as the creation-science mainstream position on petroleum's origin.[6]

This study names one internal complication honestly rather than presenting creationist geology as unanimous on this specific point: at least one published creationist geological model (sometimes called the "theobaric" model) proposes instead that oil was created directly, in its present chemical form, during Creation Week itself, and migrated into today's reservoirs during the Flood rather than being derived from buried biomass at all — a genuine, live disagreement among scientists who share this study's overall Flood-geology framework but differ on this specific mechanism. This study finds the biomass-derived, rapid-catagenesis reading — directly supported by the porphyrin chemistry above and consistent with the same coal-forming event already described in Section I — the more evidentially grounded of the two, and follows it throughout, while naming the alternative rather than hiding it.[7]

What this study holds, weighing the evidence together, is that oil and natural gas are not separate mysteries from the coal already discussed — they are the same event, the same buried biosphere, expressed in a different chemical form depending on the exact conditions of burial, heat, and pressure a given deposit experienced. And this reading extends naturally, though this study states plainly that this next step is its own reasonable extension of the model rather than a claim drawn from a dedicated source, to the shale formations now being tapped directly by hydraulic fracturing ("fracking"): shale gas and "tight oil" are extracted not from a separate reservoir the hydrocarbons migrated into over time, but directly from the same fine-grained, organic-rich source rock where the original biomass was buried and transformed — meaning the same rapid-burial, rapid-catagenesis mechanism this study argues for the source material applies with equal force to the rock fracking wells are now drilled directly into, without even requiring the additional step of long-distance migration into a separate reservoir that conventional oil extraction does.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim K: oil formed quickly from buried biomass. Porphyrins break down in oxygen, which favours rapid burial, and they can be made in the laboratory in hours. Mainstream petroleum geology fairly answers that rapid burial in low-oxygen sediment is also part of its own model, so porphyrins show fast burial, not a young age. The extension to shale and fracking is the study's own and carries no more weight than the model behind it.

III. What Modern Peat Doesn't Look Like

A further problem for the standard swamp-accumulation model deserves to be stated plainly: modern peat, the material the standard model proposes as coal's slow-forming precursor, does not actually resemble coal in its physical texture. Modern peat has a fine, homogeneous, "mashed-potatoes"

consistency, still tangled through with intact tree roots reaching down into the soil beneath it — exactly what should be expected from plant matter that has simply decayed in place, undisturbed, over an extended span. Actual coal seams, by contrast, are typically coarser, layered with distinct sheets of bark and identifiable plant debris, and conspicuously lack the root systems that would be expected if the coal had formed from vegetation that grew and decayed on the very spot where it is now found.[8] A coal seam that shows no evidence the plants composing it ever grew where they were buried, but does show the coarse, sorted, transported texture of vegetation mats torn loose and carried by moving water before being buried all at once, points toward catastrophic transport and burial rather than quiet, in-place accumulation — precisely the picture Chapter Two-A's preview of the pre-Flood world's uprooted, floating forests already anticipated.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim K: coal's texture points to transported plants, not swamps. Many coal seams lack roots and show sorted, layered plant debris. Mainstream geology fairly answers that many other seams rest on ancient soils (underclays) with root systems still in place, which is hard to explain by transport.

IV. The Scale Chapter Two-B Already Showed You

This is not an abstract question once Chapter Two-B's own narrative is held in mind. A pre-Flood world with a still-lush, still-largely-unspoiled biosphere, running for over sixteen centuries under a gentler climate and (on this study's reading) without today's mountain-driven weather extremes, growing under conditions this study has already argued were closer to ideal than anything the present world offers, represents a scale of standing plant and animal biomass a post-Flood world, per this same model, never matched again. A single, catastrophic, planet-wide burial event, uprooting and transporting that entire accumulated biosphere within a single year rather than requiring it to accumulate gradually over incomprehensible spans of time, is this study's own answer to a question that should nag at anyone thinking carefully about the sheer volume of fossil fuel still being drawn from the ground today: not tens of millions of years of gradual swamp accumulation, but one world's entire, abundant, pre-Flood biosphere, buried essentially at once.

Weighing it: Corroboration only — for claim K: a rich pre-Flood biosphere could supply the biomass. The scale argument is consistent with the Flood model, but the size of the pre-Flood biosphere is itself inferred from the model, so it cannot also prove it.

V. Fossilization Itself Requires Speed

A broader point belongs here alongside coal, oil, and gas specifically: ordinary fossilization of any kind generally requires rapid burial to occur at all. A dead organism exposed to ordinary decay, scavenging, and weathering does not fossilize; it simply decomposes and disappears, the fate of the overwhelming majority of organisms that have ever died. Fossils with fine detail preserved, and especially fossils preserving soft tissue rather than only mineralized bone, require burial fast enough to outrun ordinary decomposition — consistent with sudden, catastrophic burial events rather than slow accumulation over ages.

The single clearest case of exactly this problem comes from dinosaur fossils themselves, and it deserves full treatment here rather than a passing mention. In 2005, paleontologist Dr. Mary Schweitzer reported the discovery, inside a *Tyrannosaurus rex* femur excavated from Montana rock conventionally dated at 65 to 68 million years old, of soft, flexible material still preserved inside the fossilized bone: branching structures resembling blood vessels; small round microstructures inside them resembling cells; and, in

later work on this and other specimens, structures resembling bone cells and fragments of the protein collagen whose sequence could be read.[9] The discovery itself is not disputed — similar finds have been reported in other specimens since, including a duck-billed *Brachylophosaurus* in 2009.

What is disputed is only the interpretation. This study's own reading is the direct one: soft, flexible vessel-like structures and readable collagen fragments are not known to survive, by any demonstrated chemical process, for tens of millions of years — ordinary protein degradation chemistry sets a far shorter outer limit — and a fossil bone that still contains them is far more consistent with an age measured in thousands of years than in tens of millions. Mainstream paleontology has not simply waved the problem away. Schweitzer's own team proposed in 2013 that iron released from the animal's blood can cross-link and stabilize proteins, much as formaldehyde does in a laboratory, and tested it: ostrich blood vessels soaked in a concentrated red-blood-cell extract stayed intact for two years at room temperature, while untreated vessels decayed within days. Other researchers have since proposed further pathways, including the oxidative cross-linking that turns proteins brown. Creation scientists answer that two years in a jar is a long way from sixty-eight million years in the ground, and that no experiment has shown recognizable protein surviving anything like that span. Both are real, published positions, and this study names both.[10] The soft tissue itself is not in question. Only how long soft tissue can plausibly last is, and this study finds the young reading the more natural one.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claims K and Y: soft tissue in dinosaur bone fits thousands of years better than millions. The finds are real and replicated. Mainstream paleontology fairly answers with the iron and oxidative cross-linking hypotheses, which have been tested in the laboratory, though only over years. Earlier versions described "red blood cells with intact nuclei" and said mainstream science had no identified mechanism; both overstated the case and are corrected.

VI. Named Honestly

A mainstream geological rebuttal to the rapid-coal-and-oil-formation model exists directly, arguing the laboratory experiments cited above do not scale to real-world coal seam and petroleum formation and that the standard slow-accumulation timeline remains better supported by the specific chemical and structural composition of the deposits studied in detail.[11] This study logs that critique per its standing practice rather than presenting the rapid-formation model as uncontested, while still finding the combined weight of the scale argument (Chapter Two-B's pre-Flood biosphere), the laboratory evidence and the Spirit Lake analog, the porphyrin chemistry of oil, the textural mismatch between modern peat and actual coal, and the soft-tissue preservation problem more consistent with this study's overall reading than the alternative.

Weighing it: Concession — names the mainstream rebuttal and bears no weight either way.

VII. The Buried Treasury: Everything Else the Flood Laid Down

Coal, oil and natural gas are the resources everyone thinks of first, but they are not the whole inheritance. If the Flood laid down most of the sedimentary rock that covers the continents — the claim Chapters Four and Five defended — then almost everything modern life digs, pumps or quarries out of that rock came to us by way of the same year of judgment. Scripture itself notices that the earth holds riches below its surface: **"Surely there is a vein for the silver, and a place for gold where they fine it. Iron is taken out of the earth, and brass is molten out of the stone" (Job 28:1-2)**, and Moses promised Israel **"treasures hid in the sand" (Deuteronomy 33:19)**. The list below is not every mineral in the ground — metal ores have many origins, some tied to Creation Week itself and some to later volcanic

activity — but it covers the great sedimentary resources, the ones that lie in the Flood-laid layers. For each one, this section gives what it is, where it lies, and how the Flood model explains it. Chapter Seven then takes up what each has meant to mankind.

Natural gas and helium. Natural gas is mostly methane (the simplest hydrocarbon, one carbon atom bound to four hydrogen atoms), and it is found with oil or in the same organic-rich shales that Section II described — the same buried biomass, carried further by heat into gas. Many gas fields also hold **helium**, a light gas produced by the slow radioactive decay of uranium and thorium in the surrounding rock and trapped under the same cap-rock seals that hold the gas. Helium cools the magnets of every MRI (magnetic resonance imaging) scanner in the world's hospitals and is used in making the semiconductors inside every computer.[12] On the Flood model, the seals and traps that hold both gases are Flood-laid layers and Flood-era folds.

Oil shale and tar sands. Oil shale is fine-grained rock rich in kerogen (solid organic matter that has not yet been "cooked" into oil); tar sands, such as Canada's Athabasca deposit, are sands soaked with heavy, tar-like bitumen. Both are the same buried biomass as Section II, caught at a different stage. Scripture's own earliest petroleum products come from exactly this kind of surface deposit: Babel's builders **"had brick for stone, and slime had they for morter" (Genesis 11:3)**, the vale of Siddim **"was full of slimepits" (Genesis 14:10)**, and Moses' mother **"daubed it with slime and with pitch" (Exodus 2:3)**. The Hebrew for that "slime" is *chemar*, bitumen — natural asphalt seeping from the ground.

Limestone and chalk. Limestone is rock made mostly of calcium carbonate, much of it the crushed shells and skeletons of sea creatures; chalk is a soft, white limestone built from the microscopic plates of marine algae (coccoliths) and tiny shelled organisms (foraminifera). Carbonate rocks make up roughly a fifth to a quarter of all sedimentary rock and can exceed three thousand feet in thickness. The Institute for Creation Research points to flume experiments showing that fine carbonate mud settles into laminated layers under fast-moving water, not only in still seas, and reads the great limestone sheets as Flood deposits.[13] Andrew Snelling argues that the chalk beds of England and elsewhere — averaging over thirteen hundred feet thick, and holding large, well-preserved marine reptiles and fish that must have been buried within days — record explosive algal blooms during the Flood, not forty million years of slow settling.[14] Limestone is the raw material of cement, and cement is the binder in concrete.

Salt, gypsum and potash. These are evaporites — minerals that crystallize out of salty water. Beneath the northeastern United States a single salt formation stretches from New York to Ohio, hundreds of feet thick. The standard model explains such beds by the slow evaporation of seawater in shallow, cut-off basins. John Morris of the Institute for Creation Research notes that ancient salt beds are strikingly pure — lacking the dust, clay and plant debris found in modern evaporating pans — and proposes instead that superheated, salt-laden brines poured out on the day **"were all the fountains of the great deep broken up" (Genesis 7:11)**, precipitating salt as they met cooler seawater. He states plainly that the model "has not been adequately tested."[15] Potash (potassium salts) comes from the same kinds of beds and is one of the three great fertilizers.

Phosphate rock. Phosphate is the second great fertilizer, and it has no substitute: every living cell needs phosphorus, and farms that export crops export phosphorus with them. Phosphate rock (phosphorite) forms in marine sediments rich in organic matter and is often crowded with fossil bone, teeth and fish remains. The world's reserves are concentrated to a remarkable degree — about two-thirds of them lie in Morocco and Western Sahara — and the United States mines its own chiefly in Florida, Idaho, North Carolina and Utah.[16] That phosphate should so often come packed with the bones and teeth of sea creatures buried together is, on this study's reading, what a catastrophic marine burial would leave

behind; this is the study's own extension of the Flood model rather than a dedicated creation-science finding.

Uranium. Much of the world's mined uranium lies in sedimentary rock — "roll-front" deposits in porous sandstones, where groundwater carrying dissolved uranium met organic matter and dropped the metal out of solution.[17] The sandstones are Flood-laid layers on this study's reading, and the organic matter that trapped the uranium is the same buried biosphere. Uranium fuels about a tenth of the world's electricity.

Lithium brines. Lithium, the metal behind the batteries of phones and electric cars, is drawn largely from salty brines trapped beneath the salt flats of South America's "lithium triangle" and from hard-rock ores. The brines are ancient waters held in the pores of buried sediment.

Water itself. The great aquifers — underground layers of porous rock that hold and yield water — are among the most valuable things the sedimentary record contains. The Floridan aquifer, a limestone system beneath the whole of Florida and parts of four other states, supplies drinking water to about ten million people; the Ogallala, a sand-and-gravel aquifer beneath eight Great Plains states, supplies roughly a third of all the groundwater used for irrigation in the United States. The rock that holds this water — porous sandstone and limestone — is, on the Flood model, rock the Flood itself laid down.[18]

Taken together, this is a staggering inheritance. The same event that ended the ancient world laid up, in the rock it left behind, the fuel, the fertilizer, the building stone, the medicine-grade gases and much of the water on which the modern world runs. Scripture never says the Flood was *for* this — it was a judgment — but it is characteristic of God to bring provision out of judgment. **"The earth is the LORD's, and the fulness thereof" (Psalm 24:1)**, and the fulness includes what lies beneath it.

Weighing it: Mixed, stated per point — for claim K: the great sedimentary resources lie in Flood-laid rock. That these resources lie in sedimentary layers is not disputed by anyone. That the layers are Flood deposits rests on claim F. The specific creation-science models named here — rapid limestone and chalk deposition, hydrothermal salt — are published but untested or contested, and Morris says so of his own salt model; mainstream geology answers with evaporation basins and slow pelagic settling. The readings of phosphate and uranium are this study's own extensions and carry no more weight than the model behind them.

VIII. Wounds in the Rock: The Craters Beneath the Strata

Some of the treasury in the section above lies in places no one would think to look: inside craters left by stones that fell from the sky, now buried under thousands of feet of rock.

The best-documented example in North America lies under the small farming town of Ames, Oklahoma. Nothing marks it at the surface. In 1991 a geologist reading seismic data — sound waves bounced off the layers far below — found a ring-shaped structure about ten miles across, buried under roughly nine thousand feet of sedimentary rock. It is an astrobleme ("star wound"), the scar of an impact by an asteroid or comet. The impact shattered the dolomite and the granite beneath it, and that broken rock now holds oil and gas. Since 1991 the structure has yielded more than seventeen million barrels of oil and nearly eighty billion cubic feet of natural gas, and it is the largest of six oil-producing impact structures in the United States.[19] Scripture speaks of exactly this kind of provision: **"I will give thee the treasures of darkness, and hidden riches of secret places" (Isaiah 45:3)**.

How old it is has just changed. For decades the impact was dated to about 467.5 million years ago, from conodonts — the small, tooth-like parts of an extinct eel-like sea creature — found in the rock that filled the crater. In 2026 a team led by Elizabeth Catlos of the University of Texas at Austin, working with NASA's Johnson Space Center, dated zircon crystals in the shattered granite instead and got about 370 million years, roughly a hundred million years younger. The team now ties the impact to the Late Devonian extinction, one of the five great die-offs in the mainstream record, though they say the impact probably did not cause it alone. They also concluded that the conodonts were already old when the impact struck, churned up and mixed into the crater fill.[20]

Three conclusions follow for this study.

First, the crater does not belong to the very good creation. An impact that shatters miles of rock and buries sea creatures in its own debris is a scene of destruction. When God finished His work, **"God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good" (Genesis 1:31)**. After the Fall, **"the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now" (Romans 8:22)**. Creation scientists are not unanimous on the timing of craters elsewhere in the solar system. Astronomer Danny Faulkner, for example, allows that some small craters on the Moon may date from Creation Week or very soon after. But he too places the great impacts, and the buried craters of the earth, after the Fall, at the time of the Flood, noting that craters can be read as scars that do not fit a perfect creation.[21]

Second, the burial points to the Flood year. The Ames crater is cut into some of the lowest sedimentary layers in the rock column, and the creatures preserved in its fill were sea creatures. Thousands of feet of water-laid sediment then covered it. Chapters Four and Five have argued that those sediments are largely the work of the Flood. On that reading the impact struck after the earliest Flood layers had been laid down and was buried as the waters went on laying down more. Faulkner and others go further and propose that a swarm of impacts helped set off the day **"were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened" (Genesis 7:11)**. Scripture does not say that anything fell from the sky, so this study holds the trigger idea loosely.

Third, the "mass extinctions" read as stages of one burial. Mainstream geology counts five great extinctions spread over hundreds of millions of years. On the Flood reading they are successive levels of burial within a single year, as one community of creatures after another was overtaken. The Ames story shows how loose the link between a given crater and a given extinction can be. The same crater has now been tied to two different events a hundred million years apart, and the researchers themselves stop short of saying it caused the one they now favour. That the date could move so far by changing the method is worth noticing. It does not prove the dates wrong, though, and this study will not lean on it: mainstream geologists see a refinement, since impact heat can reset zircon and the older fossils were mixed in.

There are real difficulties, and they are named here. The Earth Impact Database lists 190 confirmed impact structures.[22] Placing the large ones within a single year raises a heat problem that creation scientists themselves have not solved. William Worraker's series on Flood heat in *Answers Research Journal* concludes that the heat from the Flood's magmatic activity alone — the forming of new ocean floor and vast outpourings of lava — "cannot be removed by known natural processes within a biblically compatible timescale," and sets aside a later part of the series for the heat of impacts.[23] Mainstream geologists also point to signs inside some buried craters of long pauses — eroded surfaces and slow-settled layers — before final burial. A Flood model has to account for each case.

Even so, the crater under Ames fits the story this chapter has told. A world judged by water was also struck from above. The wound was then sealed under Flood-laid rock, and in time it filled with oil and

gas, part of the fuel men now draw from beneath the plains. Judgment and provision lie in the same place again.

Weighing it: Mixed, stated per point — for claim R, strong inference: buried craters belong to the groaning creation, not the very good one; for claim F, reasonable inference: the Ames impact struck during the Flood. That the craters are scars of a fallen world follows closely from Genesis 1:31 and Romans 8:22, though a minority of creation scientists allow some primordial cratering, at least on the Moon. That Ames struck during the Flood rests on claim F's reading of the rock column; mainstream geology fairly answers that the overlying layers took hundreds of millions of years and that some buried craters show long pauses before burial. The Flood heat problem, impacts included, is admitted and unsolved by creation scientists themselves. The redating is corroboration only. The idea that impacts triggered the Flood is speculation, and this study holds it loosely.

Closing

Three chapters have now traced the Flood from its own opening rupture, through the rock record it left standing, to the fuel, the fossils and the buried treasury of stone, salt, phosphate, uranium and water still being drawn from beneath it today — some of it from inside craters struck into the earth and then sealed under Flood-laid rock. Together with Chapters One through Three's own case for a young, recently-populated earth, this study has now laid its complete scriptural and scientific foundation. The chapters ahead turn from the ancient world to the present one: what mankind has done with that inheritance, for blessing and for curse; what it has put into the air, the water, the land and its own body; what the data actually shows about the climate changing around us right now, and whether "man-made" is the right word for it; and finally where the whole story this study has traced from Creation is actually headed.

Weighing it: Summary — restates the chapter; adds no weight of its own.

In Short

Coal, oil and gas need not take millions of years: heat can make coal-like material and oil's chemistry in hours in a laboratory, and oil's fragile porphyrins point to rapid burial. Soft tissue in dinosaur bone is hard to square with sixty-eight million years, though mainstream science now offers a tested (if short-term) preservation mechanism. This study reads all of it as the pre-Flood world, buried fast — a reasonable inference, disputed at every step. The same Flood-laid rock also holds the limestone, salt, phosphate, uranium and groundwater on which the modern world runs. Buried impact craters, such as the one under Ames, Oklahoma, belong to a fallen world rather than the very good one; on this study's reading they most likely struck during the Flood, and some now hold oil and gas.

Chapter Seven — "A Blessing and a Curse"

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

Chapter Six ended with an inventory: the coal, oil, gas, stone, salt, phosphate, uranium and water that lie in the rock the Flood laid down. This chapter asks what mankind has done with that inheritance. The honest answer is that it has done two things at once, and James put the problem in a single sentence long before the first coal mine:

> **James 3:10** *Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be.*

The same fuel that lit the world's homes blackened its cities. The same fertilizer that fed billions poisons rivers and gulfs. The same chemistry that gave us medicine and plastics has put its residue into the blood of nearly every person alive. Moses set the choice before Israel in the same two words:

> **Deuteronomy 30:19** *I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live:*

This chapter tells the blessing first, resource by resource, because it is real and a study that told only the curse would be dishonest. Then it sets out what God required of the men He gave it to, and why, for the most part, they did not do it. Chapters Eight and Nine then document the curse in full.

I. The Blessing of Coal

For most of history the world ran on wood, muscle and water. By the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries England was running out of the first. Its forests had been cut for fuel, for charcoal to smelt iron, and for ships, and the price of firewood climbed so high that the poor of London turned to "sea coal," shipped down the coast from Newcastle. Coal was dirty and it stank, but it burned hot and it was there.

The trouble was getting it out. Mines flooded as they went deeper, and in 1712 Thomas Newcomen built the first practical steam engine to pump water out of a coal mine near Dudley in the English Midlands. James Watt's separate condenser, patented in 1769, made the engine several times more efficient, and within a lifetime steam was turning the looms of Lancashire and hauling coal itself. George Stephenson's locomotive opened the Stockton and Darlington Railway in 1825. Coal-fired coke made cheap iron and then, after Henry Bessemer's process of 1856, cheap steel — the rails, bridges, ships and machines of the modern world. In 1882 Thomas Edison's Pearl Street Station in New York began selling electricity generated by burning coal.[1]

The scale of what followed is hard to overstate. A single miner with a steam pump and a railway behind him could deliver more energy in a day than a village of woodcutters could in a season. Coal ended the stripping of Europe's remaining forests for fuel, carried food from where it grew to where it was needed, and powered the factories that made ordinary goods cheap enough for ordinary people. It still generates about a third of the world's electricity today.[2]

In short: coal broke the ceiling that firewood had placed over human life, and much of the modern world was built on it.

II. The Blessing of Oil

Petroleum was known to the ancient world as bitumen — the "slime" of Genesis 11:3 and 14:10 that Chapter Six noted, used as mortar and waterproofing for thousands of years. Its modern story begins on

August 27, 1859, when Edwin Drake struck oil at sixty-nine feet near Titusville, Pennsylvania.[3] The first great product was not gasoline but kerosene, a cheap, clean-burning lamp oil. Before kerosene, the best light a family could buy came from whale oil, and American whalers were hunting the world's whales toward collapse to supply it. Kerosene undercut whale oil within a generation and helped end the great age of whaling — the first time, but not the last, that a fossil fuel spared a living resource.[4]

Then came the internal combustion engine. Henry Ford's Model T of 1908 put motor travel within reach of working families; the tractor replaced the horse and freed the tens of millions of acres once grown to feed them; the diesel engine drove ships, trains and trucks; and the airplane shrank oceans to hours. Oil became asphalt for roads, lubricants for every machine, and the feedstock of an entire chemical industry: synthetic fabrics such as nylon (1935), plastics for everything from medical tubing to food packaging, fertilizers, paints, solvents, and the starting materials for a large share of modern medicines. The world now uses about 103 million barrels of oil every day.[5]

In short: oil gave the world cheap light, cheap travel, cheap goods and a chemistry set that reaches into medicine, clothing and food.

III. The Blessing of Natural Gas — and the Bread It Grows

In 1821 William Hart drilled the first purpose-dug natural gas well in the United States, at Fredonia, New York, and piped the gas through hollow logs to light the town.[6] Gas lit the streets of the nineteenth century, and in the twentieth it came into kitchens and furnaces, replacing coal stoves and wood fires. That change alone saved lives on a vast scale: smoke from cooking and heating with wood, dung and coal indoors still kills about three million people a year in the parts of the world that lack clean fuel.[7]

But the greatest blessing of natural gas is one most people never see. Every plant needs nitrogen, and although the air is nearly four-fifths nitrogen, plants cannot use it in that form. For all of history, farmers depended on manure, crop rotation and a few natural deposits to put usable nitrogen back into the soil, and that ceiling set a hard limit on how many people the land could feed. In 1909 the German chemist Fritz Haber found a way to combine nitrogen from the air with hydrogen to make ammonia, and by 1913 Carl Bosch had turned it into an industrial process at Oppau. Today the hydrogen for that process comes overwhelmingly from natural gas. Researchers estimate that nitrogen fertilizer made this way now feeds close to half the people on earth — roughly four billion lives that the land could not otherwise support.[8]

In short: natural gas warmed homes, cleared the smoke out of kitchens, and — through fertilizer — feeds nearly half of mankind.

IV. Stone, Salt, Phosphate, Uranium, Helium and Water

Stone. In 1824 an English bricklayer, Joseph Aspdin, patented "Portland cement," made by burning limestone and clay together. Mixed with sand, gravel and water it becomes concrete, and concrete is now the most widely used manufactured material on earth; the world makes about four billion tons of cement a year.[9] Every dam, bridge, hospital, sewer and foundation of the modern world rests on limestone the Flood laid down.

Salt. For all of history salt meant food that would keep through winter; the word *salary* likely comes from it. In the twentieth century salt became the source of chlorine, and in 1908 Jersey City, New Jersey, became the first American city to chlorinate its public water supply routinely. Typhoid and cholera, which had killed tens of thousands of Americans a year, collapsed within a generation.[10]

Phosphate and potash. With nitrogen, these make up the three great fertilizers. Florida's pebble-phosphate beds were discovered in the 1880s and made the state one of the world's great phosphate producers; more than ninety-five percent of the phosphate rock mined in the United States goes to fertilizer and animal feed.[11]

Uranium. Nuclear power, drawn largely from uranium in sedimentary rock, supplies about a tenth of the world's electricity without smoke, and its isotopes diagnose and treat disease in hospitals every day.

Helium. Recovered from natural gas, helium cools the superconducting magnets of MRI scanners, and so sits behind countless diagnoses that once required surgery.

Water. The great aquifers turned deserts into farms. Across the High Plains, center-pivot irrigation drawing on the Ogallala aquifer, developed in the 1940s and 1950s, turned the land of the 1930s Dust Bowl into one of the most productive grain regions in the world.[12]

In short: the stone, salt, phosphate, uranium, helium and water in Flood-laid rock built the world's cities, cleaned its drinking water, fertilized its fields and filled its hospitals.

V. The Scale of the Blessing

Put the pieces together and the change in human life is almost beyond belief. In 1900 the average person on earth could expect to live about 32 years; by 2023 that figure was 73.[13] In 1820 the great majority of mankind lived in what economists now call extreme poverty; today fewer than one in ten do.[14] The world's population passed one billion around 1804 and eight billion in November 2022, and the second figure is not a story of more people starving but of more people fed.[15] Famine, which was once an ordinary feature of life on every continent, has become the exception, and where it still occurs it is now almost always the product of war or tyranny rather than of the land's inability to feed its people.

Fossil fuels did much of the heavy lifting in that change, and they still supply about four-fifths of the world's energy.[16] This study does not believe any of this happened apart from God. The mandate He gave at the beginning was **"Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion" (Genesis 1:28)**, and Moses warned Israel that when prosperity came they must not say, **"My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth" (Deuteronomy 8:17)**, **"for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth" (Deuteronomy 8:18)**.

In short: longer lives, less poverty and billions more people fed — the blessing is real, and it is God's gift before it is man's achievement.

VI. What God Required: The Steward's Charge

The same Genesis that gives man dominion defines what dominion means. God did not place Adam in the garden as its owner:

> **Genesis 2:15** *And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it.*

The two verbs are worth a reader knowing. "Dress" is the Hebrew *abad*, to work or to serve; "keep" is *shamar*, to guard, watch over, preserve — the same word used of keeping God's commandments and of the cherubim who "kept" the way to the tree of life. Adam's dominion was the dominion of a gardener and a guard, not of a strip-miner. The rest of scripture keeps the ownership plain:

> **Psalm 24:1** *The earth is the LORD's, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.*
>
> **Leviticus 25:23** *The land shall not be sold for ever: for the land is mine; for ye are strangers and sojourners with me.*

The law God gave Israel built that ownership into daily practice. Every seventh year the land itself was to rest: **"in the seventh year shall be a sabbath of rest unto the land" (Leviticus 25:4)**. In war, Israel could not strip the land of its future: **"thou shalt not destroy the trees thereof by forcing an axe against them: for thou mayest eat of them" (Deuteronomy 20:19)**. Even a bird's nest found by the road carried a rule of sustainable use — take the young, but **"thou shalt in any wise let the dam go" (Deuteronomy 22:7)**, so that the next generation of birds would be there for the next generation of men. The camp had a law of sanitation: waste was to be buried outside it (Deuteronomy 23:12-13). And the righteous man's care reached even his animals: **"A righteous man regardeth the life of his beast" (Proverbs 12:10)**.

One more law deserves care rather than overstatement. Numbers 35:33-34 says, **"So ye shall not pollute the land wherein ye are... Defile not therefore the land which ye shall inhabit, wherein I dwell"** — but its immediate subject is bloodshed, the land morally defiled by murder. It is not a chemical-pollution statute. What it establishes is the principle beneath the others: the land is God's dwelling place and men answer to Him for what they do to it.

The New Testament carries the same principle into the language of stewardship. A steward manages what belongs to another and must one day give an account:

> **Luke 16:2** *And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward.*
>
> **1 Corinthians 4:2** *Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.*

In short: man was put on the earth to work it and to guard it, as a steward of Someone Else's property, and scripture expects him to give an account.

VII. Corrupted His Way — Then and Now

Genesis describes the world before the Flood in words that now read like a prophecy of our own:

> **Genesis 6:11-12** *The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.*

The Hebrew verb behind "corrupt" in both verses is *shachath*, and it is the same verb God uses in the very next breath: **"I will destroy them with the earth" (Genesis 6:13)**. Men *ruined* their way, and so the earth was *ruined* with them. The corruption of the ancient world was spiritual and moral — violence, rebellion, a way of life turned against God — and the earth bore the consequence.

The same corruption is at work today, but two things have changed its reach. The first is knowledge. **"God hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions" (Ecclesiastes 7:29)**. The chemistry and engineering of the last three centuries have given a corrupted heart tools that the men of Noah's day never had. The second is number. There were perhaps a billion people on earth in 1804; there are more than eight billion now. The same greed, carelessness and short-sightedness, multiplied by eight billion and armed with industrial chemistry, no longer stops at a man's own house. It reaches

the air everyone breathes, the water everyone drinks and the food everyone eats. Man's spiritual corruption has spread outward into the corruption of the environment.

Scripture's final word on this comes in Revelation, at the sounding of the seventh trumpet, when the time comes that God **"shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth" (Revelation 11:18)**. The Greek verb is used twice there, *diaphtheirō*, and it carries both senses at once — to corrupt and to destroy — exactly as *shachath* did in Genesis 6. The Bible opens its account of judgment on those who corrupted the earth and closes it the same way.

In short: before the Flood, men corrupted their way and the earth with it; today the same corruption, armed with knowledge and multiplied by billions, has reached the air, the water and the land.

VIII. Why We Did Not: Every Reason

If God's charge was so plain, why was it so widely ignored? The easy answer is greed, and greed is a large part of it. But an honest accounting finds at least seven reasons, and a reader who wants to avoid repeating them needs to see all of them.

1. Honest ignorance. Some of the damage was done by people who did not and could not know. When Thomas Midgley developed Freon in 1928, chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs) looked like a miracle — non-toxic, non-flammable coolants that made safe refrigerators possible. No one knew for forty-six years that they would drift into the stratosphere and destroy the ozone layer; Mario Molina and Sherwood Rowland first showed it in 1974.[17] DDT was hailed as a lifesaver against malaria, and its discoverer received the Nobel Prize in 1948, years before anyone understood what it did to the eggs of eagles. Hosea's words were spoken of Israel's rejection of the knowledge of God, but they name a danger that reaches further: **"My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge" (Hosea 4:6)**.

2. Knowledge ignored or hidden. Much of the damage was not done in ignorance at all. When workers at a Standard Oil plant in Bayway, New Jersey, went mad and died from tetraethyl lead in October 1924 — five dead and dozens hospitalized — the company blamed the men for working too hard, and leaded gasoline stayed on sale in the United States for more than seventy years.[18] Chemical companies' own studies flagged the toxicity of PCBs and of the Teflon chemical PFOA decades before the public learned of it, as Chapter Nine documents from the court record. ExxonMobil's own scientists projected the course of global warming accurately from 1977 onward while the company told the public the science was too uncertain to act on, as Chapter Ten shows. Jesus drew the line between these two kinds of wrongdoing: **"that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not... shall be beaten with few stripes" (Luke 12:47-48)**.

3. Greed: pushing the cost onto the neighbor. Economists have a dry word for it: an *externality*, a cost that falls on someone who had no part in the bargain. A factory that dumps its waste in a river instead of treating it keeps the savings as profit and hands the cost to every town downstream. Scripture's word is fraud:

> **James 5:4** *Behold, the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth.*

"Woe unto him that buildeth his house by unrighteousness, and his chambers by wrong" (Jeremiah 22:13). And beneath it all, **"the love of money is the root of all evil" (1 Timothy 6:10)**.

4. Poverty and necessity. Not every polluter is rich. A family cooking over a dung fire in a smoke-filled hut is not acting from greed but from need, and nations that burned coal to industrialize were often trying to lift their people out of hunger. That does not make the smoke harmless, but it does mean that stewardship and mercy to the poor have to be held together: **"He that oppresseth the poor reproacheth his Maker" (Proverbs 14:31)**.

5. The commons. In 1968 the ecologist Garrett Hardin gave a name to a very old problem: the "tragedy of the commons." When a pasture, a river or the air belongs to everyone, each user gains the full benefit of using a little more and bears only a sliver of the harm, so everyone uses more until the shared thing is ruined.[19] Ezekiel described it exactly:

> **Ezekiel 34:18** *Seemeth it a small thing unto you to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures? and to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must foul the residue with your feet?*

6. War. Some of the worst damage was deliberate, done in war. American forces sprayed about twenty million gallons of herbicides, Agent Orange among them, over Vietnam between 1962 and 1971. The Hanford site in Washington State, where plutonium was made for the atomic arsenal, still holds about fifty-six million gallons of radioactive and chemical waste in underground tanks. Retreating Iraqi troops set more than six hundred Kuwaiti oil wells on fire in 1991.[20] Deuteronomy 20:19-20 had forbidden exactly this — laying waste to the land itself as a weapon.

7. Indifference — and us. The last reason is the most uncomfortable, because it includes the reader. The factories polluted to make what customers wanted at the price customers would pay. Jeremiah saw a whole land ruined, and gave the reason in six words:

> **Jeremiah 12:11** *They have made it desolate, and being desolate it mourneth unto me; the whole land is made desolate, because no man layeth it to heart.*

In short: the earth was damaged by honest ignorance, by knowledge hidden for profit, by greed that pushed its costs onto others, by poverty, by shared resources no one guarded, by war — and by the indifference of ordinary people who did not lay it to heart.

IX. The Hinge: The Same Gifts, Handled Without Stewardship

Nothing in this chapter makes coal, oil or gas evil in themselves. They are part of what God called the fulness of the earth. The curse the next two chapters document did not come from the gifts but from the hands that held them. And the record contains a note of hope that should be stated before the curse is told: where men have recognized the damage and turned from it, the land has often healed. London's killer fogs ended after the Clean Air Act of 1956. The ozone layer is mending. The bald eagle has come back. Scripture holds out that pattern as a principle of how God deals with people who turn: **"If that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them" (Jeremiah 18:8)**.

Chapters Eight and Nine now set out, case by case, what man has put into the air, the water, the land and his own body. Each case ends with a plain verdict on one question: is this man-made? The reader has not come this far for evasions, and the record does not require any.

In short: the resources are God's gift; the curse is what men did with them. Where men have turned, the land has often healed.

In Short

Coal, oil, natural gas and the other resources of Flood-laid rock have given mankind longer lives, less poverty, cleaner water and food for billions — a blessing that comes from God. But God gave man the earth as a steward, to work it and to guard it, and men have instead corrupted it as they corrupted their way before the Flood: out of ignorance, out of hidden knowledge, out of greed, need, war and plain indifference. The same gifts that blessed the world have also cursed it, and the next chapters show how.

Chapter Eight — "What Man Has Put Into the Air"

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

God formed the first man from the dust and **"breathed into his nostrils the breath of life" (Genesis 2:7)**, and every person since has lived one breath at a time. An adult draws some twenty thousand breaths a day. Whatever is in the air is in the lungs, and whatever is small enough to pass through the lungs is in the blood. This chapter documents what mankind has put into that air, case by case, with the figures.

Each case ends with a plain **Verdict** on one question — *is this man-made?* — and a single sentence on what that verdict rests on. These chapters do not use the weighing notes found in the rest of this study, and the reason is stated in the Introduction: the question here is not how to read a disputed text or a contested rock layer, but what the measured, litigated and in many cases admitted record shows. Where the record is mixed, the verdict says **Partly**.

I. Before the Smoke

The pre-industrial world was not free of bad air. Cooking fires filled huts with smoke, and cities stank of sewage and tanneries. But the air of the open countryside was the air of creation, and until men began burning coal in quantity no city lived under a permanent cloud.

The complaints began early. In 1306, King Edward I is recorded to have forbidden the burning of sea coal in London because of its smoke. The ban did not hold. By 1661 the diarist John Evelyn was addressing a pamphlet to King Charles II under the title *Fumifugium, or, The Inconveniencie of the Aer and Smoak of London Dissipated*. Evelyn blamed the city's coal fires for a foul, sulphurous air that blackened buildings and damaged the lungs of its people, and he proposed moving lime-burners, brewers and other smoky trades out of the city and planting sweet-smelling gardens around it.[1] He was ignored, and London's smoke thickened for three more centuries.

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Coal smoke in pre-industrial London was recognized, named and blamed on human fuel-burning more than three hundred years ago.

II. The Killing Fogs

In the twentieth century the smoke began to kill in numbers large enough to count.

Donora, Pennsylvania, October 1948. Donora was a mill town of about fourteen thousand people in a narrow river valley south of Pittsburgh, home to a U.S. Steel zinc works and a steel-and-wire plant. On October 27 a temperature inversion — a lid of warm air sitting on cooler air near the ground — trapped the plants' sulfur dioxide and fluoride fumes in the valley for five days. Twenty people died during the smog and about fifty more within the month; between six and seven thousand, a third to a half of the town, were sickened.[2] Donora is widely credited with starting the American clean-air movement.

London, December 1952. From December 5 to 9, a cold, windless high-pressure system settled over London while the city burned coal against the chill. The resulting smog was so thick that buses stopped, cattle choked at the Smithfield show, and people could not see their own feet. About four thousand people died in the days of the fog itself; later studies put the total, including the weeks that followed, at up to twelve thousand.[3] Parliament passed the Clean Air Act of 1956, which pushed coal fires out of the city. London never had another smog on that scale.

New York, 1953, 1963 and 1966. New York suffered its own killer smogs, the worst over Thanksgiving weekend of 1966, when a stagnant air mass trapped the smoke of the city's incinerators, power plants and furnaces for several days; an estimated 168 people died.[4] By then the city had developed an early air-quality index that combined several pollutants into a single number, and residents in the New York area grew used to hearing, on the radio each day, whether the air was safe to be out in. The 1966 smog helped drive Congress to pass the Clean Air Act of 1970, and President Nixon created the Environmental Protection Agency the same year.

Los Angeles. On July 26, 1943, a brown haze descended on Los Angeles so suddenly and painfully that residents thought the city was under a Japanese chemical attack. The cause was far more ordinary. In 1952 the Caltech chemist Arie Haagen-Smit showed that Los Angeles smog was produced when sunlight cooked the exhaust of the region's cars and refineries into ozone — a different kind of smog from London's coal smoke, but just as man-made.[5] For decades Los Angeles schools canceled outdoor sports on smog-alert days.

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Every one of these disasters was traced to identifiable human sources — mills, coal fires, incinerators, cars — and each receded when those sources were controlled.

III. Lead in Every Breath

In December 1921, working for General Motors, the engineer Thomas Midgley found that a small amount of tetraethyl lead added to gasoline stopped engines from "knocking." It was cheap and it worked. It was also a potent nerve poison, and public health experts said so at the time. In October 1924, at a Standard Oil plant in Bayway, New Jersey, workers making the additive began hallucinating and convulsing; five died, and thirty-two of the forty-nine men in the building were hospitalized. Newspapers called the product "loony gas." Midgley held a press conference at which he washed his hands in tetraethyl lead and inhaled its vapor for a minute to show it was safe; he then quietly went to Europe to recover from lead poisoning.[6]

The industry funded the research that followed, and for forty years the chief industry toxicologist, Robert Kehoe, set the rule: until someone proved lead was harmful at the levels found in ordinary people, it would be presumed safe. It took a geochemist to break that rule. Clair Patterson, who first measured the age of the earth by lead isotopes, discovered while doing it that lead contamination was everywhere. In 1965 he published evidence that the lead in ordinary Americans' bodies was many times higher than natural, and his later measurements of Greenland ice showed lead in the air rising steeply from the 1920s on. The industry cut off his research funding; he kept going.[7]

The U.S. began phasing lead out of gasoline in the 1970s and banned it from road fuel in 1996. The last country in the world to stop selling leaded petrol, Algeria, did so in July 2021. The United Nations Environment Programme estimates that ending leaded fuel worldwide prevents more than 1.2 million premature deaths a year.[8] In the United States, the average lead level in children's blood has fallen by more than ninety percent since the late 1970s. The damage already done was measured in 2022: researchers estimated that more than 170 million Americans alive today were exposed to high lead levels as children, costing the country a combined 824 million IQ points.[9]

One fuel still carries lead. Most small piston-engine airplanes burn leaded aviation gasoline, and in 2023 the EPA formally found that its lead emissions endanger public health. A ten-year study of more than fourteen thousand blood samples from young children living near Reid-Hillview Airport in San Jose, California, found that their blood lead rose with the volume of piston-aircraft traffic — and fell when that traffic dropped during the 2020 lockdowns.[10]

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Lead in the air came from a single human invention, its danger was warned of from the start, and blood lead fell steeply once it was removed.

IV. Coal Smoke, Acid Rain and Mercury on the Wind

Coal-burning power plants release sulfur dioxide and nitrogen oxides, which turn into sulfuric and nitric acids in the clouds and fall as acid rain. By the 1970s and 1980s hundreds of lakes in New York's Adirondack Mountains had turned too acidic for fish, forests were dying on the high ridges of the Appalachians, and Germany had coined a word, *Waldsterben* — forest death — for the same damage in the Black Forest. The 1990 amendments to the Clean Air Act capped power-plant sulfur emissions and let companies trade allowances under the cap. It worked. Between 1990 and 2023, sulfur dioxide from American power plants fell by ninety-six percent and nitrogen oxides by ninety percent, while the electricity they generated stayed roughly level.[11]

The fine soot from coal did not stop killing, however. In 2023 a team reporting in *Science* traced the fine-particle pollution from every American coal plant between 1999 and 2020 and linked it to about 460,000 deaths among older Americans — and found coal soot roughly twice as deadly, particle for particle, as fine particles from other sources.[12]

Coal also carries mercury. Burned in a boiler, it goes up the stack as vapor, travels on the wind, and falls far away into lakes, rivers and wetlands, where bacteria turn it into methylmercury, a nerve poison that concentrates as it moves up the food chain. That is why every U.S. state has issued warnings to limit eating certain fish, and why Chapter Nine will find mercury in the fish of places with no factory in sight.

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Acid rain and airborne mercury come from identifiable fuel-burning, and acid rain fell when the emissions were cut.

V. A Hole in the Sky

The ozone layer is a thin band of ozone gas in the stratosphere, ten to thirty miles up, that absorbs most of the sun's harmful ultraviolet light before it reaches the ground. Chapter Seven told how chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs), invented in 1928, were believed perfectly safe until Mario Molina and Sherwood Rowland showed in 1974 that they would rise into the stratosphere and break ozone down. In 1985 British Antarctic Survey scientists reported that a "hole" was opening in the ozone over Antarctica every southern spring.

The world's response was the Montreal Protocol of 1987, which phased out CFCs and related chemicals. It became the first treaty in the history of the United Nations to be ratified by every member nation. The 2022 scientific assessment by the World Meteorological Organization and the UN Environment Programme found the ozone layer on track to recover to its 1980 condition by about 2040 over most of the world, by about 2045 over the Arctic, and by about 2066 over Antarctica.[13]

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. The ozone hole was caused by man-made chemicals, and it is healing because men stopped making them — the clearest proof in this chapter that the damage is real and that repentance works.

VI. Under the Flight Path

Anyone who lives near a large airport knows the film of residue that settles on cars and windowsills. The larger soot can be seen; the more dangerous pollution cannot. Jet engines emit enormous numbers of *ultrafine particles* — particles smaller than one-tenth of a micrometer, roughly a thousand times thinner than a human hair. They are so small that they add almost nothing to the weight of air pollution, which is how the government measures and regulates it, and so small that they can pass from the lungs into the bloodstream and on into the organs. In the United States they are not regulated separately at all.

The first large study came from Los Angeles International Airport in 2014. Researchers found particle counts four times higher than background ten kilometers — about six miles — downwind, elevated levels stretching at least ten miles east of the runways, and a zone of pollution covering some sixty square kilometers in which hundreds of thousands of people live and work. The airport alone produced as many ultrafine particles as a large share of all the freeways in the Los Angeles area.[14] Studies since then have found the same pattern under the approach paths of Boston's Logan Airport — including higher counts *inside* homes — and Seattle-Tacoma, and a Dutch government study around Amsterdam's Schiphol Airport found short-term effects on the lung function of children on high-exposure days.[15] Add the leaded fuel of small piston aircraft described in Section III, and the picture is plain: people who live under flight paths breathe air that people elsewhere do not.

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. The particles come from aircraft engines and fuel, and they have been measured miles downwind of the airports that produce them.

VII. The Dust of the Road: Tires and Brakes

John Boyd Dunlop patented the pneumatic tire in 1888. Every tire made since has worn away on the road, and the rubber it lost did not disappear. Tire wear is now estimated at about six million tonnes a year worldwide — shed as dust into the air, washed off roads into rivers, and carried into the sea, where it is one of the largest single sources of microplastic pollution.[16] Brake pads grind away in the same way, releasing metal-rich dust.

For most of the twentieth century tailpipe exhaust dwarfed this road dust. As engines have grown cleaner, the balance has shifted. The Organisation for Economic Co-operation and Development reported in 2020 that particles from tires, brakes and road surfaces are becoming the leading source of fine particle pollution from road traffic, and projected that total non-exhaust emissions from passenger vehicles would rise by more than half by 2030. Heavier vehicles shed more, and electric cars — heavier because of their batteries — do not solve the problem; some produce slightly more.[17] Chapter Nine follows these particles into the water, where one chemical from tire rubber has turned out to be lethal to salmon.

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Tire and brake dust exists only because of human vehicles, and its share of traffic pollution is growing.

VIII. The Whole World's Air Today

In the United States and Western Europe, the air is far cleaner than it was in 1970. Across much of the rest of the world it is not. The *State of Global Air* report of 2024 found that air pollution — outdoor fine particles, ozone, and smoke from cooking and heating indoors — was linked to about 8.1 million deaths in 2021, making it the second-leading risk factor for death on earth, behind only high blood pressure. About seven hundred thousand of those deaths were children under five.[18] Delhi, Lahore, Dhaka and dozens of other cities now live with the kind of air London knew in 1952, and residents check the day's air-quality number the way New Yorkers once listened for it on the radio.

The record also shows that it can be changed. China declared a "war against pollution" in 2014; between 2013 and 2022, fine-particle pollution across China fell by forty-one percent and in Beijing by fifty-four percent, adding an estimated two years to the life expectancy of the average Chinese citizen.[19]

Some of the worst smoke is set deliberately. In the summer and autumn of 2026, as the El Niño described in Chapter Ten dried out Southeast Asia, fires in Indonesia — as in earlier El Niño years, largely fires set to clear land — burned hundreds of thousands of acres and sent smoke across the region; on August 25, Kuala Lumpur briefly had the most polluted air of any city on earth, and hospital emergency visits for breathing problems in Indonesia rose tenfold.[20]

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. The pollution behind 8.1 million deaths a year comes overwhelmingly from human fuel-burning and land-clearing. Where weather such as El Niño worsens it, the weather is natural but the smoke is not.

IX. Where the Air Stands

Every case in this chapter has the same answer. The smoke over London in 1661 and 1952, the smogs of Donora, New York and Los Angeles, the lead in a child's blood, acid rain, mercury in the wind, the hole in the ozone layer, the particles under the flight paths and the dust of the road were all put into the air by men. None of them is a matter of opinion; all of them were measured, most of them were litigated, and several were admitted.

The record also shows something scripture leads us to expect. Where men recognized the harm and turned from it — London's Clean Air Act, the American Clean Air Act, the Montreal Protocol, the end of leaded gasoline — the air improved, sometimes within a few years. The problem was never that God's creation cannot recover. The problem is that men have been slow to stop.

In Short

Men have been fouling the air since coal smoke first choked medieval London, and in the twentieth century the smoke began to kill in the thousands. Lead, acid rain, mercury, ozone-destroying chemicals, jet exhaust and road dust are all man-made, and air pollution is now linked to about eight million deaths a year worldwide. But every time men have acted to stop a pollutant — coal fires, leaded gasoline, CFCs, sulfur emissions — the air has improved.

Chapter Nine — “What Man Has Put Into the Water, the Land, and Our Own Bodies”

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

Jeremiah wrote his indictment of Judah as if it were addressed to every generation that has inherited a good land and spoiled it:

> **Jeremiah 2:7** *And I brought you into a plentiful country, to eat the fruit thereof and the goodness thereof; but when ye entered, ye defiled my land, and made mine heritage an abomination.*

This chapter follows Chapter Eight’s method into the water, the soil, the food chain and finally the human body. It begins with what the first European explorers and settlers found, because the scale of what has been lost cannot be seen without it. Each case again ends with a plain **Verdict** on whether the damage is man-made.

I. A Plentiful Country: What the First Explorers Found

In 1497 John Cabot sailed from Bristol and reached the coast of Newfoundland. A diplomat in London, Raimondo di Soncino, wrote to the Duke of Milan that December with what Cabot’s crew reported of the sea there: **“that sea is covered with fishes, which are caught not only with the net but with baskets, a stone being tied to the baskets in order that they may sink in the water.”**[1] Those were the Grand Banks, and the fish were cod.

In 1608 Captain John Smith explored the Chesapeake Bay from Jamestown. He found oyster reefs so large that they broke the surface at low tide and ran ships aground. He wrote of fish **“lying so thick with their heads above the water, as for want of nets (our barge driving amongst them) we attempted to catch them with a frying pan,”** and of sturgeon in spring so plentiful that **“we had more sturgeon, than could be devoured by dog or man.”** A colonist of the same era wrote that waterfowl arrived **“in millionous multitudes.”**[2]

Across the continent, the passenger pigeon was the most numerous bird in North America, perhaps three to five billion strong; migrating flocks darkened the sky for hours, even days, as they passed. Bison on the Great Plains numbered in the tens of millions.[3] Similar accounts survive from the rivers of Europe before industry: the Rhine was one of the great salmon rivers of the world.

In short: the first Europeans to reach North America found waters so full of fish they could be taken in baskets and frying pans, and skies and plains full of birds and bison beyond counting.

II. What Became of the Plenty

The cod of the Grand Banks were fished for five hundred years. Industrial trawlers arrived after the Second World War and took more fish in a few decades than had been taken in the previous centuries. In July 1992 Canada closed the northern cod fishery; about thirty thousand people in Newfoundland lost

their work overnight, in the largest single layoff in Canadian history. More than thirty years later the stock has not recovered to anything like its former size.[4]

The Chesapeake's oysters, which once filtered the whole bay, fell to less than one percent of their historic numbers by the early 2000s, brought down by overharvesting, disease, and the sediment and pollution washing in from the land.[5] The passenger pigeon was shot and netted by the millions for cheap meat; the last one, a female named Martha, died at the Cincinnati Zoo on September 1, 1914. The bison were slaughtered for their hides and tongues, and in part to break the Plains tribes who depended on them, and by 1889 the naturalist William Hornaday could count only about a thousand left in all of North America.[6]

These losses were caused by overhunting and overfishing more than by pollution, but they belong in this chapter because they answer the same question. Jeremiah described exactly this: **"the beasts are consumed, and the birds; because they said, He shall not see our last end" (Jeremiah 12:4)**.

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. The collapse of the cod, the near-loss of the Chesapeake oyster, the extinction of the passenger pigeon and the near-extinction of the bison were all caused by human harvesting beyond what the land and sea could bear.

III. Rivers That Burned and Lakes That Died

The Thames, 1858. London's sewage flowed straight into the Thames, and in the hot summer of 1858 the stench from the river — the "Great Stink" — drove Parliament to hang lime-soaked curtains in its windows and finally to fund Joseph Bazalgette's great sewer system.

The Cuyahoga, 1969. On June 22, 1969, oil-soaked debris on the Cuyahoga River in Cleveland, Ohio, caught fire. It was not the first time; the river had burned at least a dozen times since 1868, and a fire in 1952 had caused over a million dollars in damage. But the 1969 fire made the national magazines, and a river so polluted that it burned became a symbol of the whole country's neglect. The next few years brought the Environmental Protection Agency (1970) and the Clean Water Act (1972).[7]

Lake Erie. By the 1960s Lake Erie was being called "dead." Phosphorus from sewage, detergents and farm runoff fed vast blooms of algae that died, rotted and used up the oxygen in the deep water. Controls on phosphorus in the 1970s brought the lake back. But farm runoff has since returned the blooms, and on August 2, 2014, a toxic algal bloom at the city's water intake forced Toledo, Ohio, to tell more than four hundred thousand people not to drink their tap water.[8]

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Sewage, industrial waste and farm runoff are human discharges, and each of these waters recovered, at least in part, when the discharges were controlled.

IV. Dead Zones: When the Blessing Runs Downhill

Chapter Seven told how nitrogen fertilizer made from natural gas now feeds nearly half the world. What the crops do not take up washes off the fields and down the rivers. In the Gulf of Mexico, nitrogen and phosphorus carried down the Mississippi feed enormous algae blooms each summer; when the algae die and decay, they strip the oxygen from the water near the bottom, and fish, shrimp and crabs must flee or die. The 2025 "dead zone" measured about 4,400 square miles; the five-year average is about 4,750 square miles, more than twice the size of the target that federal and state agencies set for it.[9] Scientists have documented hundreds of such oxygen-starved zones in coastal waters around the world.

This is the clearest case in this whole study of James 3:10 — the same fertilizer, blessing and curse, depending on how it is handled.

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. The dead zone is fed by nutrients washed from farms and cities, and its size tracks the amount of runoff each spring.

V. Poison in the Food Chain: Mercury

Minamata, Japan. Beginning in 1932, the Chisso Corporation's chemical plant at Minamata poured waste containing mercury into Minamata Bay. Bacteria in the sediment turned it into methylmercury, fish and shellfish concentrated it, and the fishing families who ate them were poisoned. Cats convulsed and died in what townspeople called "dancing cat fever." In 1956 the disease was officially recognized in people: numbness, loss of speech and sight, convulsions, and children born with brain damage because their mothers had eaten the fish. Chisso did not stop the discharge until 1968. More than two thousand people have been officially certified as victims, and many thousands more have sought recognition.[10] When the nations of the world signed a treaty to control mercury in 2013, they named it the Minamata Convention.

The Everglades. Beginning in 1989, scientists found elevated mercury in the fish, alligators, raccoons, wading birds and endangered panthers of the Florida Everglades, far from any factory. Florida issued warnings against eating largemouth bass and other freshwater fish across some two million acres of the Everglades and Big Cypress Preserve. The mercury came down from the sky — from smokestacks, including municipal waste incinerators that burned batteries and other mercury-containing trash — and the wetlands turned it into methylmercury. After the state required pollution controls on those incinerators in the 1990s, mercury in Everglades wildlife fell.[11]

The whole world. The United Nations' 2018 *Global Mercury Assessment* found that human activity has raised the amount of mercury in the atmosphere to about 450 percent above natural levels. The largest sources are small-scale gold mining and the burning of coal.[12] That is why pregnant women are told to limit tuna, swordfish and other large fish, and why mercury warnings cover fish in every American state.

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Volcanoes and natural deposits release some mercury, but human activity has multiplied the amount in the air several times over, and Minamata and the Everglades trace to human sources.

VI. From the Companies' Own Files: PCBs

PCBs — polychlorinated biphenyls — are oily industrial chemicals once used as coolants and insulators in electrical transformers and capacitors, and in paints, sealants and inks. They do not break down, they build up in fat, and they are linked to cancer and to damage to the immune, reproductive and nervous systems. They were first made commercially in 1929, and from 1935 until Congress banned their production in 1979, Monsanto was the only American manufacturer.

Anniston, Alabama. Monsanto made PCBs at Anniston for more than forty years. Documents brought out in court showed how early the company knew. In 1938, scientists working for Monsanto reported liver damage in rats exposed to PCBs. By the 1950s the company was telling its own workers to wear protective clothing and respirators. In 1969 it set up a committee on PCBs whose papers show a concern for protecting the company's image and continued sales. Many internal documents were stamped "CONFIDENTIAL: Read and Destroy." Meanwhile the plant dumped PCB waste into Snow Creek, which ran through the town's poorest neighborhoods, and buried thousands of tons more in a hillside landfill.

In 2003 Monsanto and its successor companies agreed to pay $700 million to settle the claims of some twenty thousand Anniston residents.[13]

The Hudson River. Between 1947 and 1977, two General Electric plants at Hudson Falls and Fort Edward, New York, discharged an estimated 1.3 million pounds of PCBs into the upper Hudson River. Some two hundred miles of the river, from Hudson Falls to New York City, became one of the largest Superfund sites in the country. After decades of legal fighting, GE dredged the most contaminated stretch between 2009 and 2015 at a cost of about $1.7 billion. Warnings against eating fish from the river remain in force.[14]

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. PCBs do not exist in nature; every trace of them in the Hudson, in Anniston and in the fat of wildlife and people came from their manufacture.

VII. “Forever Chemicals”: PFAS

PFAS — per- and polyfluoroalkyl substances — are a family of thousands of man-made chemicals built on the carbon-fluorine bond, one of the strongest bonds in chemistry. That strength is what makes them useful: they repel water, grease and stains, and they smother fuel fires. It is also why they are called “forever chemicals”: they essentially do not break down in the environment or in the body. They are in non-stick pans, stain-proof carpet, waterproof clothing, food wrappers and firefighting foam.

Parkersburg, West Virginia. DuPont used one of them, PFOA (also called C8), to make Teflon at its Washington Works plant on the Ohio River for more than fifty years. The company’s own studies, beginning in the early 1960s, found toxic effects in animals; later it learned PFOA was in its workers’ blood and in the drinking water of surrounding towns, and did not tell the public. The case came to light when a West Virginia farmer’s cattle began dying near a DuPont landfill and he took his case to a lawyer named Rob Bilott in 1998. A court-approved scientific panel then studied some seventy thousand people who had drunk the contaminated water and found probable links between PFOA and six diseases: kidney cancer, testicular cancer, thyroid disease, ulcerative colitis, high cholesterol and pregnancy-induced high blood pressure. In 2017 DuPont and its spin-off Chemours agreed to pay $671 million to settle about thirty-five hundred personal-injury suits.[15]

The whole country. In 2023, 3M agreed to pay at least $10.3 billion to American public water systems contaminated with PFAS, and DuPont, Chemours and Corteva agreed to pay $1.185 billion more. In 2025 New Jersey reached a settlement with DuPont and its successors that, together with a separate 3M settlement, was approved by a federal court in 2026 at about $2.5 billion — the largest environmental settlement any single state has won.[16] In 2024 the EPA set the first national drinking-water limits for several PFAS. The Centers for Disease Control and Prevention reports that PFAS are found in the blood of nearly everyone in the United States.[17]

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. PFAS were invented by chemists in the twentieth century; there is no natural source, and they are now in the blood of nearly every American.

VIII. Neighborhoods Poisoned

Love Canal, New York. In the 1940s and early 1950s the Hooker Chemical company buried nearly twenty-two thousand tons of chemical waste in an abandoned canal at Niagara Falls, then sold the land to the school board for one dollar. A school and hundreds of homes were built on and around it. In 1978, after years of heavy rain, chemicals were seeping into basements and yards; residents had high

rates of miscarriage and birth defects, and President Carter declared a federal emergency. Love Canal led directly to the Superfund law of 1980, which makes polluters pay to clean up what they dumped.[18]

Hinkley, California. From 1952 to 1966 Pacific Gas and Electric used chromium-6, a cancer-causing form of chromium, to keep rust out of the cooling towers of a gas-pipeline compressor station, and let the wastewater seep into unlined ponds and into the town's groundwater. In 1996, in the case made famous by Erin Brockovich, PG&E paid $333 million to more than six hundred residents.[19]

Libby, Montana. For decades the vermiculite mine above Libby, later owned by W. R. Grace, produced ore laced with a deadly form of asbestos. The dust settled over the town, went home on miners' clothes, and was used in gardens, driveways and the high-school running track. Hundreds of people have died of asbestos disease, and many more are sick. In 2009 the EPA declared the first public health emergency in the history of the Superfund law.[20]

Camp Lejeune, North Carolina. From 1953 to 1987 the drinking water at the Marine Corps base at Camp Lejeune was contaminated with industrial solvents, benzene and vinyl chloride from leaking fuel tanks, a dry cleaner and base operations — at levels between 240 and 3,400 times what is now considered safe. As many as a million Marines, sailors, family members and civilian workers may have been exposed. A 2014 federal study found exposed Marines had higher death rates from several cancers and from ALS. In 2022 Congress passed the Camp Lejeune Justice Act, and hundreds of thousands of claims have since been filed.[21]

Flint, Michigan. In April 2014, to save money, Flint switched its water supply to the Flint River without adding the corrosion control the law required. The water ate into the city's old pipes, and lead poured into homes; an outbreak of Legionnaires' disease linked to the switch killed at least twelve people. The State of Michigan agreed to a $626 million settlement in 2021.[22]

East Palestine, Ohio. On February 3, 2023, a Norfolk Southern freight train derailed at East Palestine, and railroad crews and officials later burned off the cars' vinyl chloride, sending a black plume over the town. In 2024 the railroad agreed to a $600 million class-action settlement.[23]

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Each of these communities was poisoned by an identifiable company or agency, and each case ended in legal findings, settlements or acts of Congress.

IX. Oil on the Water

On March 24, 1989, the tanker *Exxon Valdez* ran aground in Alaska's Prince William Sound and spilled about eleven million gallons of crude oil, fouling some thirteen hundred miles of coastline. On April 20, 2010, the *Deepwater Horizon* drilling rig exploded in the Gulf of Mexico, killing eleven men; the well gushed for eighty-seven days and released about 134 million gallons of oil. In 2016 BP agreed to pay $20.8 billion, then the largest environmental settlement in American history.[24]

In Nigeria's Niger Delta, decades of leaks from oil pipelines and wells have soaked the land and creeks of Ogoniland. The UN Environment Programme reported in 2011 that one community's drinking water held benzene, a cancer-causing chemical, at more than nine hundred times the World Health Organization's guideline, and that a full cleanup could take twenty-five to thirty years.[25]

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Oil spills and pipeline leaks are failures of human drilling, shipping and maintenance.

X. Around the World

Bhopal, India. On the night of December 2-3, 1984, a Union Carbide pesticide plant in Bhopal leaked about forty tons of methyl isocyanate gas over a sleeping city. The official toll of immediate deaths was about 3,800; estimates of the deaths that followed run far higher, and hundreds of thousands were injured. Union Carbide paid $470 million in 1989. It remains the deadliest industrial disaster in history.[26]

The Aral Sea. Once the fourth-largest lake in the world, the Aral Sea in Central Asia has lost roughly ninety percent of its area since Soviet planners diverted the two rivers that fed it to irrigate cotton in the 1960s. Its fishing industry died, and winds now lift salt and pesticide residue from the dry seabed over the surrounding towns.

The Rhine. On November 1, 1986, a fire at the Sandoz chemical warehouse near Basel, Switzerland, washed tons of pesticides into the Rhine with the firefighters' water, killing fish, and eels especially, for hundreds of miles downstream. The disaster spurred an international program that has since brought salmon back to parts of a river where they had disappeared.

The oceans. An estimated eleven million tonnes of plastic enter the ocean every year.[27]

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Each case has a named human cause: a chemical plant, an irrigation scheme, a warehouse fire, and the world's plastic waste.

XI. In Our Homes and in Our Blood

The last place man's pollution has reached is man himself.

Lead paint. Lead paint was banned in American homes in 1978, but it was not removed. The federal government's most recent national survey found lead-based paint still in about 34.6 million homes — nearly three in ten — with significantly deteriorated lead paint in 18.2 million and hazardous lead dust in 21.9 million. Lead paint is present in more than a quarter of homes where a child under six lives.[28] Old paint flaking off windowsills and ground into dust by opening and closing windows remains the leading source of lead poisoning in American children.

Forever chemicals. As Section VII showed, PFAS are in the blood of nearly everyone in the United States.

Microplastics. In 2022 Dutch researchers found plastic particles in the blood of seventeen of twenty-two healthy volunteers. In 2024 researchers at the University of New Mexico found microplastics in every one of sixty-two human placentas they tested. In 2025 a study in *Nature Medicine* found microplastics in human brain tissue, with higher amounts in samples from 2024 than from 2016.[29] What these particles do to health is still being studied, and this study will not claim more than is known. That they are there at all, in the blood of adults and the placentas that nourish unborn children, is itself the finding.

Tire rubber and the salmon. For years, biologists in the Seattle area watched returning coho salmon swim into urban creeks after autumn rains, begin to gasp and circle, and die within hours, before they could spawn — sometimes most of the fish in a creek. In 2021 a team reporting in *Science* identified the cause: 6PPD-quinone, a chemical formed when 6PPD, a preservative added to nearly every tire to keep the rubber from cracking, reacts with ozone in the air. It washes off roads with the rain, and it is lethal to coho at concentrations of less than one part per billion.[30] The dust of the road described in Chapter Eight is not harmless when it reaches the water.

Verdict: Man-made — Yes. Lead paint, PFAS, plastics and tire chemicals are human manufactures, and they are now measured in human blood, placentas and brains.

XII. What the Record Shows

Set the first explorers' accounts beside the record of the last century and the conclusion is inescapable. Waters that could be fished with baskets and frying pans were fished out. Rivers caught fire. Lakes died. Whole towns were poisoned by companies that, in several cases, knew what they were doing and hid it. The chemicals men invented are now in the blood of nearly every person alive. None of it happened by nature. Every case in this chapter has a name, a date and a human cause, and most of them have a court record.

Ezekiel's rebuke of the shepherds of Israel reads today as a description of the modern world:

> **Ezekiel 34:18-19** *Seemeth it a small thing unto you to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures? and to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must foul the residue with your feet? And as for my flock, they eat that which ye have trodden with your feet; and they drink that which ye have fouled with your feet.*

Those who fouled the water were not the only ones who had to drink it. The families of Anniston, Parkersburg, Hinkley, Flint and Minamata drank what others had fouled — and so, with PFAS and microplastics, do we all.

In Short

The first Europeans in America found seas so full of fish they could be caught in baskets. Five centuries later the cod are gone, the Chesapeake's oysters are down to one percent, rivers have burned and lakes have died. Mercury, PCBs, PFAS, lead, oil and plastics have poisoned whole towns, and the companies behind several of the worst cases knew the danger and hid it. These chemicals are now in nearly every person's blood. Every case in this chapter is man-made.

Chapter Ten — "El Niño, the Warming World, and the Straight Answer"

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

A reader who has come this far wants an answer, not a survey of opinions. Is the climate changing? Is man doing it? How much? Is it the end of the world? This chapter answers each of those questions in turn, with a plain verdict, after first explaining the great natural cycle that is shaking the world's weather as this study is written: El Niño.

Two passages of scripture frame everything that follows. The first is God's promise after the Flood:

> **Genesis 8:22** *While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.*

The second is Jesus' description of how the natural order works: God **"maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust" (Matthew 5:45)**. The seasons, the cycles and the rain belong to God's ordained order, and they fall on everyone alike. What men do with the air, the land and the sea is another matter, and the record of Chapters Eight and Nine has already shown that men can and do change them.

I. God's Pendulum: What El Niño Is

In an ordinary year, steady trade winds blow from east to west along the equator in the Pacific Ocean. They push the sun-warmed surface water westward toward Indonesia and Australia, where it piles up in a deep warm pool. Off the coast of Peru and Ecuador, cold, nutrient-rich water rises from the depths to replace it — a process called *upwelling* — and feeds one of the richest fisheries on earth.

Every two to seven years, for reasons scientists still cannot fully predict, those trade winds weaken or even reverse. The warm water piled up in the west sloshes back east across the Pacific. The upwelling off South America shuts down, the fish scatter or starve, and the heat spreading across thousands of miles of open ocean changes where the air rises and falls, bending the jet streams that steer the world's weather. That is El Niño. Its opposite, La Niña, comes when the trade winds blow harder than usual and the eastern Pacific runs cold. A typical event begins to form in the northern spring, peaks around December, and fades by the following spring or summer, lasting nine to twelve months.

Feature	El Niño ("the boy")	La Niña ("the girl")
Eastern Pacific surface water	Unusually warm	Unusually cold
Trade winds	Weaken or reverse	Strengthen
Effect on world temperature	Warms the globe for a year or so	Cools the globe for a year or so
Typical effects	Drought in Indonesia, Australia, southern Africa and the Amazon; floods on the coasts of Peru and Ecuador; wetter winters on the U.S. Gulf Coast and Southeast; fewer Atlantic hurricanes	Roughly the reverse

The name came from the fishermen of Peru, who noticed that the warm current off their coast tended to arrive around Christmas, and called it *El Niño* — the boy, meaning the Christ child. A Peruvian naval captain, Camilo Carrillo, reported the fishermen's name to the Geographical Society of Lima in 1892. Meanwhile, after the catastrophic failure of India's monsoon in 1877, the British mathematician Sir Gilbert Walker spent years searching weather records and found in the 1920s a giant atmospheric seesaw across the Pacific: when air pressure runs high at Tahiti it runs low at Darwin, Australia, and the reverse. He called it the Southern Oscillation. In the 1960s the Norwegian-American meteorologist Jacob Bjerknes showed that the fishermen's warm current and Walker's seesaw were two sides of one system. Scientists now call it the El Niño–Southern Oscillation, or ENSO.[1]

ENSO is as old as the present world's oceans. It is part of the "cold and heat" that God promised would not cease, and nothing men do created it.

Verdict: Is El Niño man-made? No. It is a natural cycle of the Pacific Ocean and atmosphere, known to fishermen for generations and mapped by scientists for a century.

II. The Record-Breaker of 2026-2027

The El Niño now under way is the strongest ever measured. The Pacific moved out of a weak La Niña in the spring of 2026; the World Meteorological Organization confirmed El Niño conditions on June 2, and NOAA declared El Niño present on June 11. By September 21, the temperature of the key monitoring region of the central Pacific, known as Niño 3.4, stood 3.11°C above normal, breaking the record of 3.08°C set on November 18, 2015. The forecasting models point to a peak later this year of around 4°C above normal, with most of the 674 individual model runs falling between 3.4°C and 4.6°C.[2] On August 22 the average surface temperature of the world's non-polar oceans reached an all-time daily record of 21.10°C (69.98°F).[3]

The effects began arriving months before the peak. Drought hit Ethiopia, Kenya and Sudan through the summer, cutting grain harvests and lowering the Nile. Rice planting was delayed across the Philippines, Cambodia, Thailand and Vietnam. Indonesia's fires burned some 230,000 acres in July alone, with smoke sending emergency-room visits for breathing problems up tenfold. Torrential rains flooded northern Panama, while drought in the Panama Canal's watershed forced the canal to cut the number of ships it could pass. Satellite images showed the plankton at the base of the eastern Pacific food chain collapsing as the upwelling failed. On June 4 the UN Food and Agriculture Organization and the World Food Programme issued their first-ever joint appeal to act ahead of the coming crisis, aiming to reach 8.8 million people in twenty-two high-risk countries.[4]

The worst is expected in the coming months. Based on the eight strongest El Niños on record, forecasters expect drought in Indonesia, the Philippines, southern Africa and the Amazon; heavy rain on the coasts of Peru and Ecuador; and a wetter-than-normal winter along the U.S. Gulf Coast and Southeast. As the climate scientist Zeke Hausfather has pointed out, El Niño is the one force in the climate system capable of causing crop failures on several continents at the same time.[5] Because El Niño releases the Pacific's stored heat into the atmosphere with a lag of several months, most of its effect on global temperature will fall in 2027; Hausfather puts the chance that 2027 will be the warmest year on record at ninety-five percent or more.[6]

Verdict: Is this El Niño man-made? No — but the record heat it produces is Partly man-made. The El Niño is natural. It is releasing its heat on top of an ocean and atmosphere that are already far warmer than a century ago, which is why each great El Niño now sets a higher record than the last. Whether human warming is making El Niños themselves stronger or more frequent is still an open research question, and this study does not claim it.

III. A Pendulum Swinging From a Rising Hook

The key to reading El Niño correctly is to see that it swings global temperature up and down *around* a level, and that the level has been rising. The great El Niño of 1997-98 made 1998 the warmest year then on record. The next great El Niño, in 2015-16, made 2016 the warmest year on record, well above 1998. The El Niño of 2023-24 made 2024 the warmest year on record again, well above 2016. The present El Niño is expected to make 2027 warmer still. Meanwhile the La Niña years — the cool swings — have themselves grown warmer: the La Niña year of 2022 was warmer than the great El Niño year of 1998.[7]

The pendulum is natural. The hook it hangs from is rising. The rest of this chapter asks why.

Verdict: Is the rising baseline explained by El Niño? No. El Niño moves temperature up and down from year to year; it cannot explain a floor that rises from one cycle to the next.

IV. A Question Older Than the Headlines

Before a single number is weighed, a reader should know that the science behind "greenhouse gases warm the earth" was not invented for a political moment. Joseph Fourier described the atmosphere's warming effect in the 1820s. John Tyndall showed in his laboratory in 1859 that carbon dioxide and water vapor absorb heat radiation. Svante Arrhenius calculated in 1896 that doubling the carbon dioxide in the air would raise the earth's temperature by several degrees, and named the burning of coal as a factor even then.[8] In March 1958 Charles Keeling began continuous measurements of carbon dioxide on the Mauna Loa volcano in Hawaii; his "Keeling Curve" is still running and is accepted as reliable by every side of the debate.[9]

The Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC), founded in 1988, did not begin with certainty. Its first report, in 1990, said a human signal was "not likely to be detectable for a decade or more." In 1995 it said "the balance of evidence suggests a discernible human influence." By 2021 it said, "It is unequivocal that human influence has warmed the atmosphere, ocean and land."[10] A reader can take that progression as science hardening too fast or as science doing what it should — growing more confident as the evidence came in. The sections that follow set out that evidence so the reader can judge.

Verdict: Is the greenhouse effect a recent invention? No. It is laboratory physics from the 1800s, and the case that humans are strengthening it was built up over three decades of measurement.

V. Is the Earth Warming?

The global surface has warmed by about 2°F (a little over 1°C) since the late 1800s, on NOAA's figure. 2024 was the warmest year in the instrumental record — about 2.63°F (1.46°C) above the pre-industrial average on NOAA's reckoning, and 1.60°C on the European Copernicus service's. The three years 2023 through 2025 together averaged more than 1.5°C above pre-industrial for the first time, and each of the last eleven years has been among the eleven warmest ever measured.[11]

The other instruments agree. Arctic sea ice has shrunk steadily since satellite measurements began in 1979; the winter maximum of 2026 tied the record low.[12] Global sea level, measured by satellite since 1993, has risen about four inches in that time, and the rate of rise has more than doubled — in 2024 it rose about a quarter of an inch in a single year.[13] The heat stored in the oceans, where most of the extra energy goes, has set new records.[14]

Verdict: Is the earth warming? Yes. Thermometers, satellites, tide gauges, ice measurements and ocean-heat measurements all agree.

VI. Is the Extra Carbon Dioxide From Us?

Before the Industrial Revolution the air held about 280 parts per million (ppm) of carbon dioxide — that is, 280 molecules of CO2 in every million molecules of air. At Mauna Loa in May 2026 it reached a new annual peak of about 432 ppm, higher than at any time in the at least 800,000 years recorded in the Antarctic ice.[15] Energy use alone released about 35.8 billion tonnes of carbon dioxide in 2025.[16]

Three independent fingerprints show where the extra carbon came from.

The light-carbon fingerprint. Plants take up the lighter carbon-12 atom in preference to the heavier carbon-13, so plant matter — and coal, oil and gas, which were plants and plankton — is poor in carbon-13. As fossil carbon has poured into the air, the air's own share of carbon-13 has fallen, from about −6.5 parts per thousand before industry to about −8 today on the scale scientists use.[17]

The missing radiocarbon. Living things contain a trace of radioactive carbon-14, which decays away over tens of thousands of years. Coal, oil and gas are old enough to have lost all of theirs. As fossil carbon has been added to the air, the share of carbon-14 in the air has been diluted exactly as expected. This is known as the Suess effect, after the chemist who first measured it in the 1950s, and it proves the extra carbon is fossil carbon, not carbon from living forests.

The missing oxygen. Burning fuel uses up oxygen. Since 1989 the Scripps Institution of Oceanography has measured the oxygen in the air, and it has been falling in proportion to the fuel burned.

The oceans, meanwhile, are absorbing carbon dioxide, not releasing it: sea water has become about thirty percent more acidic since the Industrial Revolution. So the extra CO2 cannot be coming from the sea.

Verdict: Is the extra carbon dioxide from human activity? Yes. Its chemical fingerprints are the fingerprints of burned coal, oil and gas.

VII. Is Most of the Warming Man-Made?

The IPCC's sixth assessment found the world 1.09°C warmer in 2011-2020 than in 1850-1900. It put the human-caused share at a best estimate of 1.07°C, with a likely range of 0.8 to 1.3°C. Greenhouse gases alone, it found, have warmed the world by between 1.0 and 2.0°C, while other human pollution — chiefly the sulfate particles described in Chapter Eight, which reflect sunlight — has masked part of that, cooling by up to 0.8°C. Natural drivers, the sun and volcanoes together, changed temperature by between −0.1 and +0.1°C.[18] In plain words: essentially all of the warming since the late 1800s is man-made.

That conclusion does not rest on computer models alone. It rests on patterns in the measurements that only one cause produces.

The upper air is cooling. If the sun were heating the earth, the whole atmosphere would warm, top to bottom. Instead, while the surface and lower atmosphere have warmed, the upper stratosphere, twenty to thirty miles up, has cooled. That is exactly the pattern extra greenhouse gases produce, because they trap heat low down and let the upper air radiate more heat to space. Scientists have called this one of the clearest fingerprints of human influence in the whole climate record. (The lower stratosphere also cooled in the 1980s and 1990s, mainly from the ozone loss of Chapter Eight — itself man-made.)[19]

Nights and winters are warming fastest. A stronger greenhouse slows the escape of heat at night and in winter more than it adds heat by day. The measurements show nights warming faster than days and winters faster than summers.

The warming is everywhere at once. A 2019 study of two thousand years of natural temperature records found that past warm and cold periods — including the Medieval Warm Period below — struck different regions at different times. The present warming is the only one in two thousand years to reach nearly the whole globe, about ninety-eight percent of it, at the same time.[20]

The forecasts came true. A 2020 review of the climate models published between 1970 and 2007 found that fourteen of seventeen had projected the warming that followed accurately.[21] Section XV shows that the oil industry's own scientists projected it just as accurately.

This conclusion reverses a position earlier versions of this study took. Following an Answers in Genesis article by Michael Oard from 2013, earlier versions held that only about half a degree Fahrenheit of the warming was human-caused, that at least half of it came from the sun, and that climate models ran three to eleven times too sensitive to carbon dioxide.[22] The thirteen years since have not borne that out. The warming has continued at about the rate the models projected, the sun has not brightened, and the IPCC's best estimate of the climate's sensitivity — about 3°C of warming for a doubling of carbon dioxide, likely between 2.5 and 4°C — is nowhere near three to eleven times too high.[23] Answers in Genesis was right that the warming was real and that the case for catastrophe was often overstated in public. On the human share, its 2013 estimate was wrong, and this study withdraws it.

Verdict: Is most of the warming man-made? Yes. The best estimate is that essentially all of the warming since the late 1800s is human-caused, and the fingerprints in the measurements point to greenhouse gases and to nothing else.

VIII. Is It the Sun?

The sun is the source of nearly all the earth's heat, and it is fair to ask whether it has simply grown brighter. It has not. Satellites have measured the sun's output directly since 1978. It rises and falls slightly with the eleven-year sunspot cycle, but its average has been flat or slightly falling since the 1980s — the very decades in which the earth's surface and oceans warmed fastest.[24] And as Section VII showed, a brighter sun would warm the upper atmosphere, which is cooling.

Verdict: Is the recent warming caused by the sun? No. Solar output has not risen since the 1980s, while the warming has accelerated.

IX. Was It Just as Warm in the Middle Ages?

Between roughly AD 950 and 1250, the North Atlantic world was notably warm. Norse settlers farmed and raised livestock in Greenland, which their descendants could not do once the cold returned. The Little Ice Age that followed, from roughly 1300 to 1850, froze the Thames often enough to hold "frost fairs" on the ice.[25] These were real, and they show that climate changed long before industry.

But when records from the whole world are put together, the medieval warmth was regional and uneven — strong around the North Atlantic, weaker or absent elsewhere, and not all at the same time. The 2019 study cited in Section VII found no period in the last two thousand years in which warmth or cold struck the whole globe at once, except the present.[26]

Verdict: Was the Middle Ages as warm as today? Regionally, in places — Yes. Worldwide — No.

X. Doesn't Carbon Dioxide Lag Behind Temperature in the Ice?

In the ancient record preserved in Antarctic ice, carbon dioxide rose a few centuries *after* temperature at the end of each ice age, not before. Some have argued that this proves carbon dioxide cannot drive temperature. The lag is real, but it has a clear explanation. At the end of an ice age, small, regular changes in the earth's orbit start the warming; the warming ocean then releases carbon dioxide, and that carbon dioxide amplifies the warming already under way. By one estimate about ninety percent of

the total warming in those episodes came *after* the carbon dioxide began to rise.[27] In the ice ages, carbon dioxide was a feedback. Today, men are adding it directly, and it is acting as the trigger.

Verdict: Does the ice-core lag disprove human-caused warming? No. It shows carbon dioxide amplifying natural cycles in the past; today it is being added first.

XI. Isn't Antarctica Gaining Ice?

Arctic sea ice is shrinking, and no one seriously disputes it. Antarctica is more complicated. Over the past two decades, satellite measurements of gravity show the Antarctic ice sheet losing about 140 billion tons of ice a year on balance. But between July 2021 and April 2023 it gained a record 695 billion tons or so, thanks to exceptional snowfall over East Antarctica carried by moisture-laden "atmospheric rivers." The researchers who reported it describe it as a temporary event within a longer loss, not a reversal.[28]

Verdict: Is Antarctica gaining ice overall? No. A two-year gain from heavy snowfall interrupted a two-decade loss.

XII. Are the Heat, Storms and Floods Getting Worse?

Here the honest answer is different for different kinds of weather, and the IPCC itself grades them separately.

Heat. The IPCC finds it virtually certain that hot extremes have become more frequent and intense since the 1950s, and that human influence is the main cause. The Lancet Countdown, a yearly international report on health and climate, estimated in 2025 that heat-related deaths averaged about 546,000 a year in the last decade, roughly a quarter more than in the 1990s.[29]

Heavy rain. The IPCC finds it likely that human influence has intensified heavy downpours in many regions. A warmer atmosphere holds about seven percent more water vapor for each degree Celsius of warming.

Drought. Medium confidence that human influence has worsened some agricultural droughts.

Hurricanes. No clear trend in the *number* of tropical storms. But the share of hurricanes reaching the most intense categories has likely increased over the last four decades, and the rainfall inside individual storms — Hurricane Harvey's flooding of Houston in 2017 among them — has been made heavier by warming, with high confidence.

Tornadoes, hail and river floods. Low confidence in any detectable trend, largely for lack of good long-term records.[30]

The gap between these careful grades and headlines that call every storm "climate change" is real, and a careful reader should keep it in mind.

Verdict: Is the weather getting worse because of man? Heat waves — Yes. Heavy rain — Yes. The strongest hurricanes and their rainfall — Partly. Drought — Partly. The number of hurricanes, tornadoes and hail — Not shown.

XIII. Climategate: Was the Warming Faked?

In November 2009 hacked emails from the Climatic Research Unit at the University of East Anglia were published, and phrases such as “trick” and “hide the decline” were widely read as proof that scientists had rigged the temperature record. Investigations by a committee of the British Parliament, by Pennsylvania State University and by an independent British review each found no fraud or manipulation of the data, though several criticized the unit’s secrecy and poor handling of requests for its data.[31] Just as important, the temperature record does not depend on that one unit. NASA, NOAA, the Japan Meteorological Agency, the European Copernicus service and the independent Berkeley Earth project — begun by a physicist who was himself skeptical of the record — all reconstruct global temperature separately, and they agree.

Verdict: Did Climategate show the warming was faked? No. It damaged public trust, and fairly exposed poor transparency, but independent records confirm the warming.

XIV. The Wandering Magnetic Pole

One more piece of news is often and wrongly folded into the climate discussion. The magnetic North Pole — the point a compass points to, which is not the same as the geographic North Pole — has been moving across the Arctic from northern Canada toward Siberia, at times by fifty to sixty kilometers a year, and now sits over the Arctic Ocean. First located by James Clark Ross in 1831, it moves because of the flow of molten iron in the earth’s outer core.[32] It has nothing to do with greenhouse gases, sea ice or the weather.

Verdict: Is the moving magnetic pole caused by climate change? No.

XV. Did Those Who Sold the Fuel Know?

In 2023 a team of researchers published in *Science* an analysis of every global-warming projection that ExxonMobil’s own scientists made, in internal documents and scientific papers, between 1977 and 2003. They found that the company’s scientists projected warming of about 0.20°C per decade, give or take 0.04°C — which is what happened — and that between 63 and 83 percent of their projections were accurate, depending on the measure used. They also correctly predicted when human-caused warming would first become detectable. Their projections were as skillful as those of independent academic and government scientists, and more skillful than some. Throughout the same years, the company’s public statements emphasized doubt about the science.[33]

The same pattern — internal knowledge, public doubt — appeared with leaded gasoline, PCBs and PFOA in Chapters Eight and Nine. Jesus drew the line between sins of ignorance and sins of knowledge: **“that servant, which knew his lord’s will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes” (Luke 12:47)**.

Verdict: Did the fossil-fuel industry know? Yes. Its own scientists projected the warming accurately for a quarter of a century while the company told the public the science was unsettled.

XVI. Will It Destroy the Earth or End Mankind?

This is the question behind much of the fear, and scripture answers it directly.

> **Genesis 8:22** *While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.*
>
> **Psalm 104:5** *Who laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever.*

God **"formed it to be inhabited" (Isaiah 45:18)**. The present world will end, but not by men's smokestacks: **"the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise… Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness" (2 Peter 3:10, 13)**. Chapter Eleven takes that promise up in full. The science, for its part, does not predict the end of mankind either; the IPCC's reports describe serious and costly harm, not extinction.

But "not the end of the world" is not the same as "no harm." The harm is already here, and it is counted in lives: more than half a million heat deaths a year; failed harvests; coastal land lost to rising seas; floods made heavier. It falls hardest on the poor — the subsistence farmer in Africa whose rains fail, the laborer in South Asia who cannot stop working in the heat, the island family with nowhere higher to go — who did least to cause it. Scripture has a word for harm that the strong push onto the weak: **"He that oppresseth the poor reproacheth his Maker" (Proverbs 14:31)**.

Verdict: Will man-made warming destroy the earth or end mankind? No. Is it harming people, especially the poor? Yes.

XVII. What Should a Believer Do With This?

The answer is neither fear nor indifference. **"God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind" (2 Timothy 1:7)**. A believer does not need to panic about a world God has promised to sustain. Nor does he need to worship creation, the error Paul named when men **"worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator" (Romans 1:25)**. But he is a steward, and a steward is expected to be found faithful, to foresee trouble and prepare for it — **"A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished" (Proverbs 22:3)** — and to care for the poor who suffer most.

How nations should respond — which policies, at what cost, how fast — is a question on which honest believers disagree, and this study does not prescribe a political program. What it does say is that the facts are no longer in serious doubt, that telling the truth about them is a Christian duty, and that each person is answerable for his own stewardship: the waste he makes, the fuel he burns, the pollution he tolerates, and the way he treats the neighbors who breathe the same air and drink the same water.

In short: not fear, not creation-worship, not indifference — faithful stewardship, honest speech, and mercy to the poor.

XVIII. The Straight Answer

Question	Verdict
Is El Niño man-made?	No
Is the record heat of the 2026-27 El Niño man-made?	Partly — a natural cycle on a man-made rising floor
Is the greenhouse effect a recent invention?	No — it is nineteenth-century physics
Is the earth warming?	Yes
Is the extra carbon dioxide from human activity?	Yes
Is most of the warming man-made?	Yes — essentially all of it since the late 1800s
Is it the sun?	No
Was the Middle Ages as warm as today worldwide?	No — warm in places, not worldwide
Does the ice-core lag disprove human warming?	No
Is Antarctica gaining ice overall?	No
Is man-made warming making heat waves worse?	Yes
Is it making heavy rain worse?	Yes
Is it making hurricanes more numerous?	Not shown
Is it making the strongest hurricanes stronger and wetter?	Partly
Did Climategate show the warming was faked?	No
Is the moving magnetic pole caused by climate change?	No
Did the fossil-fuel industry know?	Yes
Will warming destroy the earth or end mankind?	No
Is it harming people, especially the poor?	Yes

In Short

El Niño is a natural cycle, as old as the oceans, and the 2026-27 event is the strongest ever measured. But it swings around a baseline that has been rising for a century, and the measurements leave no serious doubt about why: the extra carbon dioxide in the air is from burned coal, oil and gas, and essentially all of the warming since the late 1800s is man-made. The sun is not the cause, the Middle Ages were not as warm worldwide, and the oil industry's own scientists saw it coming. It will not end the world God has promised to sustain — but it is already harming people, and the poor most of all.

Chapter Eleven — "From a Groaning Creation to a New Creation"

Climate Change: A Study From Creation to New Creation

Ten chapters have carried this study from a very good beginning, through a Curse, a Flood, a rock record and the treasury it buried, to the blessing and the curse men have made of that inheritance, and into the present-day question of the climate changing around us right now. This final chapter exists to answer one more question, and to bring this whole study back to the title it has carried from its very first page: if the world really did begin the way Chapter One described, and really has been groaning under a Curse ever since Chapter Two-A, where is all of it actually headed — and does that destination change how a believer ought to hold the pollution and the climate change the last four chapters have laid out?

I. A Creation Still Groaning

Scripture does not describe the created world as a neutral, indifferent backdrop to human history. It describes it as an active participant in the Curse's ongoing consequences, and as a participant that actively longs for those consequences to end:

> **Romans 8:19-22** *For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope, Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.*

This is Chapter Two-A's own Curse, described here from creation's own side of it — not a single event that happened once and finished, but an ongoing condition ("groaneth… until now," present tense, spoken from Paul's own first-century vantage point and still true from this study's). Whatever the present data show — and Chapters Eight through Ten have shown that the pollution is man-made and that essentially all of the warming since the late 1800s is man-made too — none of it happens in a morally or spiritually neutral system. It happens inside a creation scripture itself describes as still under judgment, still decaying, and still waiting.[1]

Weighing it: Direct statement — for claim R: the whole creation groans and waits to be delivered. Romans 8:19-22 says so. Readers differ on whether "the creature" means the whole created order or humanity; the groaning "until now" is not in dispute.

II. Not Permanent — Scripture's Own Promised End

The corruption Chapter One's Section XIII and Chapter Two-A both traced from Eden forward is not, on scripture's own account, the final word. Peter describes a coming, decisive termination to the present created order, using deliberately dramatic, physical language:

> **2 Peter 3:10** *But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.*
>
> **2 Peter 3:13** *Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.*

This is the same Peter, in the same short letter, who has already reminded his readers of the Flood this study spent three full chapters defending (2 Peter 3:5-6, quoted in Chapter Four) — the same author treating both the past global judgment by water and a future global judgment by fire as equally real,

equally historical events on the same divine timeline, not as two different literary registers.[2] John is given the same promise in a vision, described from the other side of it, already accomplished:[3]

> **Revelation 21:1** *And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.*
>
> **Revelation 21:4** *And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.*

Weighing it: Direct statement — for claim R: God promises new heavens and a new earth. 2 Peter 3:13 and Revelation 21:1-4 say it outright. Readers differ on whether "new" means replaced or renewed, and on the timing; they do not differ on the promise.

III. The Full Circle This Study's Title Has Named All Along

Here is the shape of the whole story this study has now told, start to finish. A very good creation (Chapter One) — cursed, but not yet ruined, and groaning ever since (Chapter Two-A, Romans 8) — reshaped by a single catastrophic year of global judgment that this study has defended in careful physical and scriptural detail (Chapters Four through Six) — leaving behind a buried treasury that blessed mankind beyond measure and that mankind, failing as a steward, turned into a curse on the air, the water, the land and its own blood, and into a warming it has now measurably caused (Chapters Six through Ten) — and now, on scripture's own promise rather than this study's own speculation, headed toward a second and final remaking: not a slow recovery of the current fallen order, but an entirely new heavens and new earth, in which the corruption Chapter One first identified entering the world on the day Adam sinned is not managed, mitigated, or offset, but ended outright and permanently. *Creation to New Creation* was never simply this study's title. It is the actual shape of the story scripture tells, from its first chapter to its last.

Weighing it: Summary — draws the study's thread together; adds no weight of its own.

IV. What This Means for How a Reader Holds the Climate Question

This is not a reason for indifference toward the created world in the meantime. The same creation groaning in Romans 8 is still the world God placed the first man in specifically "to dress it and to keep it" (Genesis 2:15, already quoted in Chapter One)[4] — a stewardship mandate scripture never revokes simply because the world's final future lies elsewhere. But it is a reason for a particular kind of steadiness that this study hopes a reader carries away from Chapters Seven through Ten's plain account of the record: neither the fear that a warming planet represents a crisis outside of God's sovereign control, nor the complacency that pretends nothing in the created world matters because it is all headed for the fire eventually. Scripture holds both truths at once — a real, present world worth honest stewardship and honest inquiry, and a certain, promised future in which every consequence of the Curse this study has traced from Genesis 3 onward is finally, completely undone.

Weighing it: Reasonable inference — for claim R's practical meaning: stewardship now, without fear or indifference. The mandate to dress and keep the garden is a direct statement; that it still applies, and that God's promise rules out despair, are reasonable inferences most Christian readers share.

V. What Would Change This Study's Mind

Naming this is a discipline, not a gesture. These are the findings that would overturn load-bearing claims of this study, and a reader could go looking for any of them.

A plain narrative text where *yom* with a number, or "evening and morning," means an age. Claim **Y** rests on that construction meaning an ordinary day wherever scripture tells history. One clear narrative counter-example would reduce it from a strong inference to an open question.

A demonstration that Genesis 5 and 11 skip generations while still giving each father's age at the son's birth. The six-thousand-year count depends on those ages being linked. Gaps of the kind found in Matthew 1 would stretch the count, though not to millions of years.

A scriptural statement of animal death, or of a predator, before Genesis 3. Claim **D** rests on the diet of Genesis 1:29-30 and on Paul. A text placing animal death in the very good world would end it.

Widespread, well-developed ancient soils, with root systems in place, at many of the Grand Canyon's major contacts. Claim **F**'s case from the rock rests on how rarely such surfaces appear. If they proved common, the case would collapse to the text alone.

Soft tissue shown, in a natural burial setting and not only in a jar, to survive for millions of years. That would remove claim **K**'s soft-tissue argument, though not the rest of the chapter.

On claim C, the test is in the measurements. This study now holds that essentially all of the warming since the late 1800s is man-made. It would be overturned by any of these: the upper stratosphere found warming along with the surface, as it would if the sun were the cause; the extra carbon dioxide found to lack the carbon-13, radiocarbon and oxygen fingerprints of burned fossil fuel; or a natural driver identified that tracks the rising floor of the last seventy years, El Niño to El Niño. None of these exists in the evidence as it stands, which is why Chapter Ten answers the question with a plain verdict.

Claim S has no test of that kind either. It rests on the documented record — measurements, court findings, settlements and the companies' own files — set beside the steward's charge of Genesis 2:15.

Claim R has no such test. It rests on direct statements of scripture; what would change it is not a finding but a different reading of the text.

None of the first five findings exists in the evidence as it stands. That is the state of the evidence, not a proof of the conclusion.

Weighing it: Discipline, not argument — bears no weight either way; it names what would overturn this study's position.

Closing

This study began with a Creator who spoke, and who did not leave His creation without an explanation of itself. It ends with the same Creator's own promise that the corruption entering the world in Chapter One's final section — decay, death, a groaning creation, a climate itself no longer behaving the way the "very good" world first did — does not get the last word. The climate is changing, and Chapter Ten has shown that man is changing it, as Chapters Eight and Nine showed he has fouled the air, the water, the land and his own blood. Scripture has already named what God will do about those who corrupt the earth: He will **"destroy them which destroy the earth" (Revelation 11:18)**. But whatever this present

world's climate does between now and then, scripture's own last word on the subject is not a temperature graph. It is a new heaven and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness — the very good world Chapter One described, restored, and this time, incorruptible for good.

Weighing it: Summary — restates the study; adds no weight of its own.

In Short

Creation still groans under the Curse, but scripture promises that it will not always: God will make new heavens and a new earth, where there is no more death. That promise is no excuse for neglecting the world now — the command to tend it was never withdrawn, and men will answer for the damage they have done — and no reason to fear that the climate has slipped out of God's hands. The story that began with "very good" ends with all things made new.

Appendix — Weights and Verdicts

Part One lists every load-bearing argument this study makes about the ancient past and the promised future, grouped by the claim it serves, with its weight and what the opposing reading can fairly answer. The final rows are arguments earlier versions of this study made that this version withdraws, corrects or demotes — including earlier versions' position on claim C. They are kept visible so that no later version quietly puts them back. **Part Two** gathers every verdict from Chapters Seven through Ten, where the study answers questions of present-day record with a plain Yes, No or Partly.

Part One — Weight of Each Argument

#	Claim	Argument	Where	Weight	What the other reading fairly answers
1	Y	*Yom* with a number, or "evening and morning," marks an ordinary day in plain narrative	Ch. 1 §I	Strong inference	Genesis 1 is a unique, patterned text; the sun is not made until day four
2	Y	Exodus 20:11 grounds the working week in the six days of creation	Ch. 1 §I	Direct statement	The comparison may be analogy, not identity of length
3	Y	Deep time is a recent proposal (Hutton, Lyell)	Ch. 1 opening	Reasonable inference	A claim's age says nothing about its truth
4	Y	Genesis 5 and 11 add up to about six thousand years since Adam	Ch. 3 §II	Strong inference	Genealogies can skip generations; the Septuagint's numbers are larger
5	Y	Most Christian teachers held a thousands-of-years chronology until the late 1700s	Ch. 3 §III	Corroboration only	They had no geological evidence to weigh
6	Y	Radiometric dating fails on rocks of known age	Ch. 3 §IV	Reasonable inference	Excess argon; K-Ar unsuited to young lava; independent methods agree
7	Y	Jeanson's pedigree-based DNA clock gives a recent human family tree	Ch. 3 §V	Corroboration only	Whole-genome trio studies do not reproduce his mutation rate
8	D	"Very good" (*tov me'od*) excludes a world running on death	Ch. 1 §II	Reasonable inference	"Very good" may mean fit for purpose
9	D	Genesis 1:29-30 gives all animals plants for food	Ch. 1 §III	Direct statement	Provision is not prohibition
10	D	Romans 5, Romans 8 and 1 Corinthians 15 extend death's entry to animals	Ch. 1 §III	Reasonable inference	Paul's subject is human death
11	D	Behemoth was a grass-eating, dinosaur-like creature	Ch. 1 §XII	Reasonable inference	Poetic description of a hippopotamus or elephant
12	H	The lights were made for signs, seasons, days and years	Ch. 1 §IV	Direct statement	Granted by all
13	H	The heavens speak (Psalm 19) and God set the Mazzaroth (Job 38)	Ch. 1 §V	Direct statement	Granted; how much content they carry is the question
14	H	The zodiac once told the gospel (Bullinger)	Ch. 1 §V	Corroboration only	The zodiac is traced to Babylon; the decans come from late sources
15	P	A mist watered the ground before rain fell	Ch. 1 §VI	Direct statement	Genesis 2:5 may speak only of the time before man

16	P	No rain fell until the Flood	Ch. 1 §VI; Ch. 2-B	Reasonable inference	Not stated anywhere in scripture
17	P	Psalm 104:6-9 describes mountains rising after the Flood	Ch. 1 §VII	Reasonable inference	Many read it as the third day of creation
18	P	Pre-Flood lives lasted centuries; lifespans fell sharply after the Flood	Ch. 1 §XIII	Direct statement	The numbers may be symbolic, as in some ancient king lists
19	P	Cities, music and metalwork arose within a few generations	Ch. 2-A §II	Direct statement	Granted by all who read Genesis 4 as history
20	P	Gold lay nearer the surface of a young, undisturbed earth	Ch. 2-A §II	Reasonable inference	An argument from silence and from the model
21	N	“Saw… took” ties Genesis 6:2 to human lust (Genesis 3:6; 34:2; 2 Samuel 11:2)	Ch. 2-A §III	Reasonable inference	Angels could sin by the same pattern
22	N	*Nephilim* means “fellers,” tyrants, not a hybrid race	Ch. 2-A §III	Reasonable inference	The spies’ report (Numbers 13:33) links them to great size
23	N	Job’s “sons of God” need not govern Genesis 6	Ch. 2-A §III	Reasonable inference	Job is the closest Old Testament parallel; Jude and 2 Peter pair angels with the Flood
24	F	The text describes a global Flood	Ch. 4 §I	Strong inference	“All the earth” can mean the known land
25	F	The fountains of the deep were violently “broken up”	Ch. 4 §II	Direct statement	Granted; the mechanism is the question
26	F	Catastrophic plate tectonics is the mechanism	Ch. 4 §II	Working model	No known physics for the speeds and heat loss
27	F	Mount St. Helens laid down layers in hours and cut a canyon in a day	Ch. 5 §I	Strong inference	Loose ash is not hardened rock
28	F	The Grand Canyon’s layers are flat, with sharp contacts	Ch. 5 §II	Reasonable inference	Burrows, mud cracks, channels and karst record exposure
29	F	Coconino cross-bedding and trackways point to water	Ch. 5 §II	Corroboration only	Mainstream reads desert dunes
30	F	The Carbon Canyon fold bent while soft	Ch. 5 §III	Reasonable inference	Fractures and calcite twinning point to hard rock
31	F	A breached lake carved the canyon quickly	Ch. 5 §IV	Reasonable inference	Mainstream spillover is dated to 5-6 million years ago; some creationists prefer Flood runoff
32	F	Polystrate trees were buried quickly	Ch. 5 §VI	Corroboration only	Mainstream agrees each tree was buried fast

33	F	The Ames impact crater struck during the Flood and was buried by Flood sediment	Ch. 6 §VIII	Reasonable inference	The overlying layers took hundreds of millions of years; some buried craters show long pauses; the Flood heat problem, impacts included, is unsolved
34	F	Redating the Ames crater by a hundred million years shows how much the dates depend on interpretation	Ch. 6 §VIII	Corroboration only	A refinement: impact heat resets zircon, and the older fossils were mixed into the fill
35	K	Heat turns wood into coal-like material fast	Ch. 6 §I	Reasonable inference	Laboratory coal is not natural coal
36	K	Spirit Lake shows plant debris gathered fast, with no roots beneath	Ch. 6 §I	Corroboration only	It is peat-like debris, not coal
37	K	Porphyrins in oil require rapid burial	Ch. 6 §II	Reasonable inference	Rapid burial is part of the mainstream model too
38	K	Coal texture shows transported plants	Ch. 6 §III	Reasonable inference	Many seams sit on root-bearing underclays
39	K	Soft tissue in dinosaur bone fits thousands of years	Ch. 6 §V	Reasonable inference	Iron and oxidative cross-linking, tested in the laboratory
40	K	Limestone, chalk, salt, phosphate, uranium and the great aquifers lie in Flood-laid rock	Ch. 6 §VII	Mixed	Evaporation basins and slow settling; the salt model is untested; the phosphate and uranium readings are the study's own extension
41	R	The ground was cursed and death entered by one man	Ch. 2-A §I	Direct statement	Readers differ on how far the Curse reached
42	R	Creation groans and waits to be delivered	Ch. 11 §I	Direct statement	"The creature" may mean humanity
43	R	God will make new heavens and a new earth	Ch. 11 §II	Direct statement	Replaced or renewed; the timing
44	R	Buried impact craters are scars of the fallen creation, not the very good one	Ch. 6 §VIII	Strong inference	Some creation scientists allow primordial cratering, at least on the Moon
45	Y	*Withdrawn in part:* every numbered *yom* in the Old Testament means an ordinary day "without exception"	Ch. 1 §I	Narrowed to plain narrative	Hosea 6:2 and Zechariah 14:7
46	P	*Withdrawn:* Genesis 5 lifespans trend downward before the Flood	Ch. 1 §XIII	Withdrawn	Jared and Methuselah outlived Adam
47	P	*Demoted:* the Psalm 104 reading is a "directly-sourced conclusion"	Ch. 1 §VII	To reasonable inference	A source's conclusion is still an inference

48	N	*Demoted:* "after his kind" rules out the angelic reading "regardless"	Ch. 2-A §III	To reasonable inference	Governs plants and animals, not spirits
49	N	*Corrected:* Genesis 39:6-7 and "men of renown" in Genesis 11:4	Ch. 2-A §III	Replaced	Genesis 34:2; Genesis 11:4 says "make us a name"
50	Y	*Corrected:* Luther and Calvin "independently computed" 5,500-5,600 years	Ch. 3 §III	Corrected	Luther's chronology gave about 3960 B.C.; Calvin gave no computation
51	Y	*Corrected:* "Y-chromosome Adam" at about 6,000 years	Ch. 3 §V	Corrected	Jeanson's own Y-root is about 4,500 years
52	F	*Withdrawn:* the 1982 Mount St. Helens canyon was cut by a Spirit Lake dam breach	Ch. 5 §§I, IV	Withdrawn	It was cut by a mudflow
53	F	*Withdrawn:* no soils, burrows or channels anywhere in the Grand Canyon sequence	Ch. 5 §II	Withdrawn	Trace fossils, channels and karst are present
54	F	*Withdrawn:* mainstream geology rejects lake spillover "entirely"	Ch. 5 §IV	Withdrawn	Mainstream spillover hypotheses exist
55	K	*Withdrawn:* a Mount St. Helens log with wood on one end and coal on the other	Ch. 6 §I	Withdrawn	No documentation found
56	K	*Corrected:* "red blood cells with intact nuclei"; no mainstream mechanism	Ch. 6 §V	Corrected	Cell-like microstructures; iron cross-linking tested
57	C	*Corrected:* mainstream warming figure of 1.2-1.3°F	Ch. 10 §V	Corrected	NOAA gives about 2°F
58	C	*Withdrawn:* the human share of warming is overstated — about 0.5°F, with at least half from the sun (AiG, 2013)	V8 Ch. 7 §§III, X	Withdrawn	IPCC best estimate: essentially all warming since 1850-1900 is human-caused (Ch. 10 §VII)
59	C	*Withdrawn:* climate models run three to eleven times too sensitive	V8 Ch. 7 §III	Withdrawn	Past projections broadly accurate; sensitivity likely 2.5-4°C (Ch. 10 §VII)
60	C	*Withdrawn:* the sun explains much of the warming	V8 Ch. 7 §VIII	Withdrawn	Solar output flat since the 1980s; upper stratosphere cooling (Ch. 10 §VIII)
61	C	*Corrected:* the Medieval Warm Period rivalled today	V8 Ch. 7 §IV	Corrected	Regional, not global (Ch. 10 §IX)
62	—	*Replaced:* Romans 12:2 as proof that God does not change	Intro.	Replaced	Malachi 3:6; James 1:17

Weighing it: Method, not argument — this table restates the weights given in the notes; it adds none of its own.

Part Two — Every Verdict

Chapters Seven through Ten answer questions of present-day record rather than of interpretation, so they carry verdicts instead of weights. Each verdict is set out, with the evidence it rests on, in the section named.

#	Question	Where	Verdict
1	Was London's coal smoke, complained of from 1306 and 1661, man-made?	Ch. 8 §I	Yes
2	Were the killing smogs of Donora, London, New York and Los Angeles man-made?	Ch. 8 §II	Yes
3	Was the lead in the air, and in children's blood, man-made?	Ch. 8 §III	Yes
4	Are acid rain and airborne mercury man-made?	Ch. 8 §IV	Yes
5	Was the ozone hole man-made — and is it healing because men stopped?	Ch. 8 §V	Yes
6	Is the ultrafine-particle and lead pollution under flight paths man-made?	Ch. 8 §VI	Yes
7	Is tire and brake dust man-made, and growing?	Ch. 8 §VII	Yes
8	Is the air pollution behind about 8.1 million deaths a year man-made?	Ch. 8 §VIII	Yes — overwhelmingly
9	Were the collapse of the cod, the Chesapeake oyster, the passenger pigeon and the bison man-made?	Ch. 9 §II	Yes
10	Were the burning Cuyahoga, the "dead" Lake Erie and the Great Stink man-made?	Ch. 9 §III	Yes
11	Are the fertilizer-fed dead zones man-made?	Ch. 9 §IV	Yes
12	Is the mercury in fish — Minamata, the Everglades, the world — man-made?	Ch. 9 §V	Yes
13	Are PCBs in the Hudson, Anniston and living bodies man-made?	Ch. 9 §VI	Yes
14	Are PFAS "forever chemicals" man-made?	Ch. 9 §VII	Yes
15	Were Love Canal, Hinkley, Libby, Camp Lejeune, Flint and East Palestine man-made?	Ch. 9 §VIII	Yes
16	Are the great oil spills and the Niger Delta's pollution man-made?	Ch. 9 §IX	Yes
17	Were Bhopal, the Aral Sea, the Rhine spill and ocean plastic man-made?	Ch. 9 §X	Yes
18	Are lead paint, PFAS, microplastics and tire chemicals in our bodies man-made?	Ch. 9 §XI	Yes
19	Is El Niño man-made?	Ch. 10 §I	No
20	Is the record heat of the 2026-27 El Niño man-made?	Ch. 10 §II	Partly — a natural cycle on a man-made rising floor
21	Does El Niño explain the rising baseline?	Ch. 10 §III	No
22	Is the greenhouse effect a recent invention?	Ch. 10 §IV	No
23	Is the earth warming?	Ch. 10 §V	Yes
24	Is the extra carbon dioxide from human activity?	Ch. 10 §VI	Yes
25	Is most of the warming man-made?	Ch. 10 §VII	Yes — essentially all of it since the late 1800s
26	Is the recent warming caused by the sun?	Ch. 10 §VIII	No

27	Was the Middle Ages as warm as today worldwide?	Ch. 10 §IX	No — warm in places, not worldwide
28	Does the ice-core lag disprove human-caused warming?	Ch. 10 §X	No
29	Is Antarctica gaining ice overall?	Ch. 10 §XI	No
30	Is man-made warming making heat waves and heavy rain worse?	Ch. 10 §XII	Yes
31	Is it making the strongest hurricanes stronger and wetter, and droughts worse?	Ch. 10 §XII	Partly
32	Is it making hurricanes, tornadoes and hail more numerous?	Ch. 10 §XII	Not shown
33	Did Climategate show the warming was faked?	Ch. 10 §XIII	No
34	Is the moving magnetic pole caused by climate change?	Ch. 10 §XIV	No
35	Did the fossil-fuel industry know?	Ch. 10 §XV	Yes
36	Will man-made warming destroy the earth or end mankind?	Ch. 10 §XVI	No
37	Is it harming people, especially the poor?	Ch. 10 §XVI	Yes

Sources & Notes

Every citation in this study is gathered here, in one place, organized by chapter, so that the chapters themselves read without interruption. Each chapter's notes are numbered independently, matching the superscript markers within that chapter's own text.

Chapter One — "Very Good"

1. Genesis 1:1-2.
2. Genesis 1:3-27, summarized.
3. The sequence-alignment observation (vegetation before animal life, sea/air life before land life, etc.) is a real, checkable feature of the text's own order.
4. Answers in Genesis has published on the functional coherence of Genesis 1's creation order; see AiG's "Creation" topical archive (answersingenesis.org/creation/) for material specifically addressing the order-of-creation question, including "Did God Really Create Plants Before the Sun?" (answersingenesis.org/days-of-creation/did-god-really-create-plants-before-sun/), which defends the internal coherence of the day-three/day-four sequence directly.
5. The "yom" grammatical argument (evening-and-morning bookending, or number pairing, marking an ordinary day in plain narrative elsewhere in the Old Testament; Hosea 6:2 and Zechariah 14:7 are the texts most often cited against the rule) is drawn from standard Hebrew lexical treatment (Strong's H3117; Brown-Driver-Briggs) and from Answers in Genesis's own published treatment of the argument (David Menton, "What a Difference a Day Makes," AiG).
6. Genesis 1:4, 10, 12, 18, 21, 25 ("good"); 1:31 ("very good").
7. Deuteronomy 6:5. The grammatical function of *me'od* as an intensifying adverb denoting fullness/totality, rather than a simple comparative, is standard Hebrew lexical usage.

8. Genesis 1:29-30.
9. Romans 5:12; Romans 8:20-22; 1 Corinthians 15:21-22, 26.
10. Reasons to Believe, "Did Vertebrate Animals Die before the Fall of Man?" (reasons.org/explore/publications/articles/did-vertebrate-animals-die-before-the-fall-of-man) — cited here as the old-earth counter-position this study names honestly rather than hides, per standing practice, while following the young-earth reading throughout.
11. The observation that Genesis 1 deliberately withholds the proper names of the sun and moon (using functional descriptions instead) as an implicit polemic against surrounding solar/lunar deity-worship is a widely-noted feature of the text among conservative Old Testament commentators; presented here as a textual observation about the passage's own word choice.
12. The astronomical stability of solar/lunar cycles as a form of design corroboration is a standard creation-science observation; see Answers in Genesis's astronomy topical archive for material on the precision of created timekeeping.
13. Psalm 19:1-4.
14. Job 38:31-33. The identification of "Mazzaroth" with the zodiacal band is a common reading, but the word occurs only here and its meaning is uncertain; mainstream historians of astronomy trace the twelve-sign zodiac to Babylonian astronomy.
15. E. W. Bullinger, *The Witness of the Stars* (1893), read directly from the full public-domain text (Project Gutenberg edition, gutenberg.org/files/49018/49018-h/49018-h.html) rather than summarized secondhand. Presented throughout as a real, citable, extra-biblical tradition built on Psalm 19 and Job 38 — never as this study's own claim or as scripture's own explicit statement.
16. Bullinger's reconstruction is itself extra-biblical. Many conservative scholars regard the "gospel in the stars" as unproven, and mainstream historians date the zodiac's twelve signs to Babylonian astronomy of the first millennium B.C. Named here so the tradition is held at its proper weight.
17. Deuteronomy 4:19; Isaiah 47:13-14; Jeremiah 10:2.
18. Genesis 2:5-6.
19. Answers in Genesis, "Did the Pre-Flood World Have a Vapor Canopy?" (answersingenesis.org/creationism/did-pre-flood-world-have-vapor-canopy/) — AiG's own stated position is rejection of the vapor-canopy model. The counsel in the text (hold the Bible firmly, scientific models loosely) paraphrases the spirit of that treatment; it is not a quotation.
20. The connection drawn between the mist's uninterrupted, rain-free hydrological pattern and pre-Flood unbelief (per 2 Peter 3:3-6) is this study's own reasonable inference from the described physical conditions and Peter's own stated mechanism for end-times scoffing, applied here to the pre-Flood generation Peter is himself describing in the same passage — not a separate direct textual statement.
21. The catastrophic plate tectonics model (runaway subduction, simultaneous release of subterranean water and steam-driven rainfall) is presented per Answers in Genesis's published material — see "Noah's Lost World," "A Catastrophic Breakup," and "Catastrophic Plate Tectonics: A Global Flood Model of Earth History," all at answersingenesis.org/geology/plate-tectonics/ — named honestly as a working model rather than a closed case. A critical non-YEC geological rebuttal exists (Old-Earth Ministries) and is logged for fair treatment in Chapter Four.
22. Answers in Genesis, "Psalm 104:6-9—the Flood or Day 3 of Creation Week?" (answersingenesis.org/the-flood/psalm-104-flood-or-day-three-of-creation-week/), arguing directly from the passage's allusion to the Genesis 9:11 rainbow covenant and from translation analysis that the passage describes Flood-recessional tectonics rather than the third creation day.

23. See note 22, above.
24. Genesis 2:19-20.
25. Genesis 2:23; Genesis 3:20.
26. The claim that Adam likely named plant life, geographic features, or other elements of creation beyond cattle, fowl, and beasts of the field is this study's own reasonable inference from Adam's demonstrated naming role, not a separate direct textual statement.
27. Genesis 2:9, 16-17.
28. Genesis 1:29; Genesis 2:15. The inference that Adam possessed detailed working botanical knowledge comparable to his demonstrated zoological knowledge is this study's own reasonable synthesis.
29. Genesis 2:15.
30. Genesis 3:21; Genesis 4:20-22 (full treatment in Chapter Two-A).
31. The claim that Adam possessed developed "physics" or engineering-level technical knowledge is explicitly NOT made here — this study bounds the claim to what the text supports and treats anything beyond that as belonging to his descendants' later, named expertise.
32. Genesis 1:11-12, 21, 24-25.
33. Answers in Genesis, "Created Kinds (Baraminology)" and "Variety Within Created Kinds" (answersingenesis.org/creation-science/baraminology/ and its sub-page), and the broader Answers Research Journal baraminology archive (answersresearchjournal.org/baraminology/). The term *baramin* was coined by Frank L. Marsh, *Fundamental Biology* (1941).
34. Allan Steel, "Could Behemoth Have Been a Dinosaur?", *Journal of Creation* 15:2 (August 2001): 42-45, hosted at Answers in Genesis (answersingenesis.org/dinosaurs/could-behemoth-have-been-a-dinosaur/). Job 40:15-24. The dinosaur-like reading of behemoth is a common creation-science reading but disputed even within young-earth circles (hippo/elephant readings exist), named honestly above.
35. Genesis 5, full chapter.
36. The overlap is arithmetic from the genealogy's own numbers (Methuselah born A.M. 687; Adam died A.M. 930; Noah born A.M. 1056; Methuselah died A.M. 1656). That these men met and talked is an inference, not a direct textual statement.
37. Genesis 11:10-26.

Chapter Two-A — "The Curse and a Groaning World"

1. Genesis 3:17-19. The Hebrew *arur* as formal covenant-curse language (compare Deuteronomy 27) is standard lexical usage.
2. Romans 5:12; Romans 8:20-22; 1 Corinthians 15:21-22 — already cited in Chapter One.
3. Genesis 2:11-12.
4. That the earth's mineral wealth remained abundant and accessible through the pre-Flood era, rather than being depleted by the Curse, is an inference from the absence of any textual statement to the contrary, combined with the young-earth model's view of a geologically undisturbed pre-Flood crust — not a direct scriptural statement in its own right.
5. Genesis 4:17.
6. The Sumerian King List's own tradition of implausibly long pre-flood reigns, a flood, and sharply shortened post-flood reigns is presented here as secular, extra-biblical corroboration of the same

general pattern Genesis records with historical precision — not as an independent confirmation of Genesis's specific numbers.

7. Genesis 4:20.
8. Genesis 4:21.
9. Genesis 4:22.
10. That dinosaur-kind animals continued to coexist with humanity through the pre-Flood era, unaffected in temperament by the Fall beyond the "no predation" change already discussed in Chapter One, is an inference from the absence of any textual statement of their extinction or behavioral change prior to the Flood.
11. See Chapter One, Sections VI-VII and their accompanying notes, for the Psalm 104 mountain-formation reading.
12. Genesis 4:23-24.
13. Genesis 6:1-4.
14. The Sethite reading followed here goes back at least to Julius Africanus and Augustine (*City of God* XV.23); the angelic reading is found in 1 Enoch 6-7, in much early Jewish and Christian interpretation, and in many modern commentaries. Lexical support: Strong's H5303/H5307 and Brown-Driver-Briggs. Cross-references: Genesis 3:6; 34:2; 2 Samuel 11:2; 1 John 2:16; Exodus 34:16; Deuteronomy 7:3-4; Malachi 2:11; 2 Corinthians 6:14; Luke 3:38; Genesis 11:4; Numbers 16:2; Job 1:6, 2:1, 38:7; Jude 6-7; 2 Peter 2:4-5; Job 1:1; Psalm 37:37; Luke 1:6. Earlier versions cited Genesis 39:6-7 where Genesis 34:2 fits the "saw… took" pattern, and said Genesis 11:4 uses the phrase "men of renown," which it does not.
15. Genesis 6:5, 6:11.

Chapter Two-B — "The Story of Man: Everyday Life From Eden to Ararat"

This chapter is a narrative and carries no footnote markers in its text, per its own opening note. Its sources are gathered here instead.

1. The narrative's spine is Genesis 2:7 through 9:17, read straight through in order. Every event, every name, every date, and every quoted line comes from that span unless noted below.
2. The three-part account of Adam's constitution — body formed, breath of life and soul life breathed in, and God's own holy spirit given upon a condition — is this study's working position, argued from Genesis 2:7 and Genesis 2:17 together with the comparison text below. The specific claim that Adam's holy spirit was withdrawn the day he ate, while his body lived on nine hundred and thirty years, is this study's reading of "in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die," not a separate direct statement of Genesis.
3. John 3:34 supplies the "without measure" language applied to Adam here by comparison to Christ. That Adam received the same measure from his first breath is this study's own inference from his demonstrated capacity, not a stated claim of scripture.
4. Strong's H120 (*adam*) and H127 (*adamah*) supply the name's meaning and the ground-wordplay of Genesis 2:7. The two-fold use of *adam* — humankind collectively in Genesis 1:27, and one particular man from Genesis 2 onward — is a direct feature of the text.
5. Adam's perfect form, balance, digestion, endurance, and sensory function are inference from the "very good" verdict of Genesis 1:31 and from the absence of any defect in a creation examined and pronounced complete — not a separate list scripture supplies. Ordinary bodily facts retained

(hunger, warmth, cooling by sweat, tiredness after honest work) are asserted on the plain ground that Adam was a man, formed of the dust, with a man's body.

6. That Adam was taught directly by God rests on Genesis 2:16-17 (direct instruction), 2:15 (assigned work), 2:19 (the animals brought to him), and 3:8 (the walking in the cool of the day). That language was given rather than developed is inference from Genesis 2:23, where Adam's first recorded speech is already a complete, reasoned sentence.
7. Genesis 2:10-14 for the four rivers and the gold, bdellium, and onyx of Havilah. The observation that this places accessible mineral wealth at the surface of a young world is carried forward from Chapter One, Section VI, and Chapter Two-A.
8. Genesis 1:30 for the herbivorous assignment; Genesis 9:2-3 for its revocation after the Flood, along with the new fear of man upon the animals. The contrast between the two is a direct textual feature, and it is one of the clearest markers in scripture that the post-Flood world was not the pre-Flood one.
9. Genesis 3:21 for the coats of skins. That this instituted the pattern of substitutionary animal sacrifice — and explains why Cain and Abel both knew to bring an offering without being separately instructed — is this study's own reasonable inference, not a statement Genesis makes directly.
10. The suggestion that divine fire may have shown which offering was accepted in Genesis 4:4-5 is inference from scripture's later, repeated pattern: Leviticus 9:24; Judges 6:21; 1 Kings 18:38; 1 Chronicles 21:26; 2 Chronicles 7:1. Genesis 4 itself does not state the mechanism, and this narrative says so where it raises the point.
11. Genesis 3:24 is followed exactly: cherubim and a flaming sword keeping the way of the tree of life. Scripture describes no gate and no door, and this narrative does not supply one.
12. Genesis 4:17-24 for Cain's city, Jabal, Jubal, Tubal-cain, Naamah, and Lamech's boast; Genesis 4:25-26 for Seth, Enos, and the beginning of calling on the name of the LORD. KJV spellings are used throughout, the King James Version being this study's base text.
13. The Genesis 6:1-4 material — "sons of God" as Seth's covenant line, "daughters of men" as the profane line, and *Nephilim* as human tyrants rather than a hybrid race — matches the fuller treatment already given in Chapter Two-A, Section III, and its notes 13 and 14.
14. Genesis 6:3 for the hundred and twenty years (read by some as a countdown to the Flood and by others as a limit on human lifespan; the narrative notes both); Genesis 6:14-16 for the ark's specifications; Genesis 7:2-3, 7:11-12, 7:16, 7:19-20, 7:24 for the loading, the rupture, the shut door, and the year of water; Genesis 8:1-19 for the recession, the raven, the dove, and the coming out; Genesis 8:20-22 and 9:1-17 for the altar, the promise, and the bow.
15. 2 Peter 2:5 for Noah as "a preacher of righteousness"; Hebrews 11:7 for his being "moved with fear"; 1 Peter 3:20 for the eight souls; 2 Peter 3:3-6 for the scoffers' own reasoning, applied here to the pre-Flood generation as a reasonable inference (see Chapter One, note 20).
16. Genesis 6:9's "perfect in his generations" is read as moral uprightness rather than genetic purity, matching Job 1:1, Psalm 37:37, and Luke 1:6.
17. The reshaped post-Flood landscape, the flatter pre-Flood topography, and the possibility that the mist system ended permanently with the Flood are all carried forward from Chapter One, Sections VI and VII, and Chapter Four, and are held at the same weight assigned there — a working creation-science model, not a direct scriptural statement.
18. Where scripture does not record what Adam or Eve or Noah felt inwardly, this narrative says so and stops. Sensory detail supplied for atmosphere — colors, textures, the sound of a forge — is

acknowledged literary license, bounded by the physical conditions this study has already established from the text.

Chapter Three — "Six Thousand Years Since Eden"

1. The working position that the six-thousand-year count runs from Adam's expulsion from Eden (Genesis 3:23-24), rather than from the creation week itself, is set out in the companion study *The Age of the Earth*.
2. Genesis 5; Genesis 11:10-26; Exodus 12:40; 1 Kings 6:1. The full five-system cross-check and the Exodus-date question are worked out in *The Age of the Earth*.
3. Martin Luther, *Supputatio annorum mundi* (1541), placing creation about 3960 B.C.; John Calvin, *Institutes* I.14.1, on the world not yet having reached six thousand years; James Ussher, *Annales Veteris Testamenti* (1650); Stephen Jay Gould, "Fall in the House of Ussher," *Natural History* (1991). Earlier versions of this study said Luther and Calvin "independently computed" dates of 5,500-5,600 years; that overstated Calvin's part and misstated Luther's figure.
4. Known-age tests as reported by creation researchers: the Hualalai 1800-1801 flow from J. G. Funkhouser and J. J. Naughton, *Journal of Geophysical Research* 73 (1968); the Mount St. Helens dacite from S. A. Austin, *CEN Technical Journal* 10:3 (1996); historic Etna flows as compiled by A. A. Snelling. The mainstream response on excess argon and the limits of K-Ar dating on young rock: G. B. Dalrymple, "40Ar/36Ar analyses of historic lava flows," *Earth and Planetary Science Letters 6* (1969), and the TalkOrigins Archive. The accelerated-decay proposal and its acknowledged heat problem: L. Vardiman, A. A. Snelling and E. F. Chaffin, eds., *Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth*, vol. 2 (2005).

Section V draws on N. T. Jeanson and E. Holland, "Evidence for a Human Y Chromosome Molecular Clock: Pedigree-Based Mutation Rates Suggest a 4,500-Year History for Human Paternal Inheritance," Answers Research Journal* 12 (2019); Jeanson's books *Traced* (2022) and *They Had Names* (2025); Answers in Genesis, "Native Americans and Noah" (2025); and, for the mainstream rebuttal, published whole-genome parent-child (trio) studies of human mutation rates and geneticist Dan Stern Cardinale's published critiques. Earlier versions of this study placed "Y-chromosome Adam" at about 6,000 years; Jeanson's own figure for the Y-chromosome root is about 4,500 years.*

Chapter Four — "The Flood That Reshaped the World"

1. Genesis 7:19-20; 2 Peter 3:5-6; Matthew 24:38-39.
2. The catastrophic plate tectonics mechanism (runaway subduction, simultaneous water/steam release) is presented per Answers in Genesis's published material: "Noah's Lost World," "A Catastrophic Breakup," and "Catastrophic Plate Tectonics: A Global Flood Model of Earth History" (answersingenesis.org/geology/plate-tectonics/).
3. AiG, "Can Catastrophic Plate Tectonics Explain Flood Geology?" (answersingenesis.org/geology/plate-tectonics/can-catastrophic-plate-tectonics-explain-flood-geology/) — named here specifically because its own title frames the model as an open question, a framing this study follows rather than overselling.
4. A critical, non-secular geological review of the catastrophic-tectonics model exists at Old-Earth Ministries (oldearth.org), arguing from within Bible-believing but old-earth geology; named honestly per standing practice rather than omitted.

5. See Chapter One, Sections VI-VII, and AiG, “Psalm 104:6-9 — the Flood or Day 3 of Creation Week?” (answersingenesis.org/the-flood/psalm-104-flood-or-day-three-of-creation-week/).

Chapter Five — “Rock Layers in Weeks, Not Eons”

1. The June 12, 1980 pyroclastic-flow strata (up to 25 feet, laid down in hours) and the canyon cut by the March 19, 1982 mudflow are described by Steven A. Austin, “Mount St. Helens and Catastrophism” (Institute for Creation Research, 1986), and summarized by Answers in Genesis (“Mount St. Helens: Evidence for Genesis!”). The eruptions themselves are documented by the U.S. Geological Survey. The mainstream caution that loose volcanic deposits erode far faster than hardened rock is made in the TalkOrigins Archive’s treatment of the Mount St. Helens argument. Earlier versions of this note attributed the 1982 canyon to a Spirit Lake dam breach; that was an error.
2. Steven Austin’s Grand Canyon flood-geology research on sharp, unweathered layer contacts is summarized at ICR (“Grand Canyon: Exposing the Flood,” icr.org/content/grand-canyon-exposing-flood) and Apologetics Press (“Important Creationist Studies at Grand Canyon”). For the mainstream reply — trace fossils, mud cracks, raindrop impressions, channels and ancient karst within the sequence — see the sources in note 10.
3. Cross-bedding angle and grain-packing analysis of the Coconino Sandstone, and vertebrate trackway gait analysis within it, are documented in creation-science geological literature (Answers Research Journal; ICR, “Grand Canyon: Is It Really ‘Exhibit A’ for Evolution and the Old Earth?”).
4. Snelling, A., “The Carbon Canyon Fold, Eastern Grand Canyon, Arizona,” Answers Research Journal (answersresearchjournal.org/geology/carbon-canyon-fold-arizona/).
5. The microscopic cement and quartz-grain deformation evidence for soft-sediment folding is documented in the same Answers Research Journal article (note 4, above).
6. A detailed critical review of the Tonto Group’s deformation, arguing the fold evidence instead shows lithified-rock bending, is available at peacefulscience.org, “The Tonto Deformation” (peacefulscience.org/articles/examining-yec-claims-tonto-group-cambrian-3/); named honestly per standing practice.
7. The Bidahochi Formation’s lake-bed sediments and the Hopi Lake/Lake Bidahochi model are documented at Answers Research Journal, “Remembering Spillover Erosion of Grand Canyon” (answersresearchjournal.org/remembering-erosion-grand-canyon/), and at canyonministries.org, “How Was the Grand Canyon Formed? A Catastrophic Lake Spillover Model.”
8. Dr. Steven Austin’s argument for catastrophic lake-breach carving of the Grand Canyon within weeks, and the Afton Canyon/Lake Manix analog, are set out in the sources in note 7; the argument is paraphrased here rather than quoted.
9. ICR’s own preference for direct receding-floodwater carving over the lake-spillover model, and its critique of the hypothetical lake as unnecessary, is set out at icr.org/article/15902, “Grand Canyon Carved by Flood Runoff, Not Lake Spillover” — logged here as a genuine, internal disagreement among Flood geologists rather than a unanimous creationist position.
10. Mainstream secular dating of Hopi Lake and rejection of the catastrophic-breach reading, and a broader critical response to creationist Grand Canyon claims, are documented at thenaturalhistorian.com, “What a New Grand Canyon Study Really Says — and Why Creationists Will Misrepresent It” (2026), and the National Center for Science Education (ncse.ngo, “Flood Geology in the Grand Canyon”). Lake overflow as a mainstream hypothesis: N. Meek and J.

Douglass, “Lake overflow: an alternative hypothesis for Grand Canyon incision and development of the Colorado River,” in *Colorado River Origin and Evolution* (Grand Canyon Association, 2001).

11. Field-based creationist Grand Canyon research is presented on film in the *Beyond Is Genesis History?* documentary series’ Grand Canyon episode and in Dr. Steven Austin’s recorded field lectures, both cited across creation-science media as primary visual resources for this chapter’s claims.
12. Polystrate fossils as an argument against slow, gradual deposition are documented across creation-science literature (AiG, ICR); the physical decay-rate argument against long exposure is a standard, checkable claim about wood decomposition rates. For the mainstream reading of standing fossil trees as rapid local burials, see the Joggins Fossil Cliffs, Nova Scotia (UNESCO World Heritage Site).

Chapter Six — “Coal, Oil, and Fossils — Made Fast”

1. Rapid coal/oil formation research is documented in Answers Research Journal (“The Origin of Oil: A Creationist Answer,” answersresearchjournal.org/origin-of-oil-creationist-answer/) and AiG (“The Origin of Oil,” answersingenesis.org/geology/the-origin-of-oil/; “Coal, Volcanism and Noah’s Flood,” answersingenesis.org/the-flood/coal-volcanism-and-noahs-flood/).
2. Laboratory experiments producing coal-like material from wood in hours to weeks under heat, and the accelerating role of volcanic clay minerals, are documented at ICR, “On the Origin of Coal” (icr.org/article/6093).
3. The Spirit Lake log mat and its bark-rich bottom layer are described by Steven A. Austin, “Mount St. Helens and Catastrophism” (ICR, 1986); Austin’s coal research is his dissertation, “Depositional Environment of the Kentucky No. 12 Coal Bed” (Pennsylvania State University, 1979). The critique that the Spirit Lake deposit is peat-like debris, not coal, is made in the TalkOrigins Archive. Earlier versions of this study described a Mount St. Helens log with “wood on one end and coal on the other”; no documentation for that claim was found in either creationist or critical sources, and it is withdrawn.
4. Porphyrin chemistry as evidence for rapid oil formation, including the oxygen-fragility argument, is documented at ICR, “The Chemistry of Oil — Explained by Flood Geology” (icr.org/article/chemistry-oil-explained-by-flood-geology/).
5. Laboratory production of porphyrins from chlorophyll within hours under moderate heating is documented in the same ICR source as note 4.
6. The biomass-derived, catastrophic-burial reading of oil’s origin is documented at Answers in Genesis, “The Origin of Oil” (answersingenesis.org/geology/the-origin-of-oil/), and Answers Research Journal, “The Origin of Oil — A Creationist Answer” (answersresearchjournal.org/origin-of-oil-creationist-answer/).
7. The alternative “theobaric”/primordial-oil creationist model (oil created directly during Creation Week, migrating into reservoirs during the Flood rather than being biomass-derived) is documented in the same Answers Research Journal source as note 6; named honestly as a live internal disagreement within creationist geology rather than treated as settled.
8. The textural mismatch between modern peat’s fine, root-tangled consistency and actual coal’s coarser, bark-sheeted, root-free composition is documented in the same ICR source as note 2.
9. Dr. Mary Schweitzer’s 2005 discovery of soft, flexible vessel-like structures and cell-like microstructures in a Tyrannosaurus rex femur: M. H. Schweitzer et al., *Science* 307 (2005): 1952-1955; collagen sequence work in *Science* 316 (2007) and, for *Brachylophosaurus*, *Science* 324 (2009). Earlier versions of this study described “red blood cells with intact nuclei”; that overstated

what was reported. The finds are and summarized at Answers in Genesis, “Does Soft Tissue in Fossils Confirm a Young Earth?” (answersingenesis.org/fossils/3-soft-tissue-in-fossils/).

10. The iron cross-linking hypothesis: M. H. Schweitzer et al., “A role for iron and oxygen chemistry in preserving soft tissues, cells and molecules from deep time,” *Proceedings of the Royal Society B* 281 (2014; published online 2013). Oxidative cross-linking: J. Wiemann et al., *Nature Communications* 9 (2018). The creationist reply: the AiG source in note 9. Earlier versions of this study said mainstream paleontology had proposed no identified or tested mechanism; that was wrong, and is withdrawn.
11. A mainstream geological rebuttal of the rapid coal/oil formation model exists (csun.edu/~vcgeo005/Nr57Oil.pdf, “Understanding the natural ancient origin of oil versus a young-earth creationist model”); named honestly per standing practice.
12. Helium’s origin in the radioactive decay of uranium and thorium, its trapping with natural gas, and its use in MRI magnets and semiconductor manufacturing: U.S. Geological Survey, *Mineral Commodity Summaries*, “Helium” (pubs.usgs.gov/periodicals/mcs2025/).
13. Tim Clarey, “Rapid Limestone Deposits Match Flood Account,” Institute for Creation Research, May 31, 2018 (icr.org/article/limestone-deposits-match-flood-account), reporting flume experiments on energetic carbonate-mud deposition and giving carbonates as 20-25% of sedimentary strata. The mainstream reading of carbonate platforms as slow, shallow-sea accumulations is summarized by the National Center for Science Education, “The Fatal Flaws of Flood Geology” (ncse.ngo).
14. Andrew A. Snelling, “Chalk It Up to a Global Flood,” Answers in Genesis, June 19, 2016 (answersingenesis.org/geology/natural-features/chalk-it-global-flood/). For the mainstream answer, see the critique of creationist chalk arguments at oldearth.org (“Creation Science Rebuttals, Chalk and Noah’s Flood”).
15. John D. Morris, “Evaporites and the Flood,” Institute for Creation Research, June 1, 2010 (icr.org/article/evaporites-flood), including his statement that the hydrothermal model “has not been adequately tested.” The mainstream evaporation-basin model and its critique of the magmatic/hydrothermal alternative are summarized at geochristian.com, “A young-Earth creationist magmatic model for the origin of evaporites” (2013).
16. World phosphate reserves of about 74 billion tons, of which Morocco (with Western Sahara) holds about 50 billion; U.S. production in Florida, Idaho, North Carolina and Utah; and more than 95% of U.S. phosphate rock used for fertilizer and feed: U.S. Geological Survey, *Mineral Commodity Summaries 2025*, “Phosphate Rock” (pubs.usgs.gov/periodicals/mcs2025/mcs2025-phosphate.pdf). The Flood reading of phosphate is this study’s own extension.
17. Sandstone-hosted “roll-front” uranium deposits: World Nuclear Association, “Geology of Uranium Deposits” (world-nuclear.org); IAEA, *World Distribution of Uranium Deposits* (IAEA-TECDOC-1629). The Flood reading is this study’s own extension.
18. The Floridan aquifer’s service to about ten million people and the Ogallala’s share of U.S. irrigation groundwater: U.S. Geological Survey Water Science School and the High Plains Aquifer program; see also “Ogallala Aquifer,” *Encyclopedia of the Great Plains* (plainshumanities.unl.edu).
19. The Ames structure, Major County, Oklahoma — discovery by seismic mapping in 1991, diameter about 10 miles (16 km), burial under about 9,000 feet (2,700 m) of sediment in Arbuckle dolomite and underlying granite, and production of more than 17.4 million barrels of oil and 79.5 billion cubic feet of gas: K. S. Johnson and J. A. Campbell, eds., *Ames Structure in Northwest Oklahoma and Similar Features: Origin and Petroleum Production*, Oklahoma Geological Survey Circular 100 (1997); summarized in “Ames crater,” *Wikipedia*.

20. E. J. Catlos et al., *Meteoritics & Planetary Science* (2026), doi:10.1111/maps.70191; University of Texas at Austin, Jackson School of Geosciences, “Meteor Hit Oklahoma 100 Million Years Later Than Previously Thought” (jsg.utexas.edu, September 2026); and “A hidden asteroid crater under Oklahoma could be connected to one of Earth’s major mass extinctions,” *Space.com* (October 2026). The earlier conodont-based age of about 467.5 million years and the team’s view that the conodonts were reworked into the crater fill are both from the Jackson School release.
21. Danny Faulkner, “A biblically-based cratering theory,” *Journal of Creation* 13, no. 1 (1999): 100-104 (creation.com/articles/a-biblically-based-cratering-theory). Faulkner places the small lunar highland craters in Creation Week or very soon after, and the large lunar basins and the earth’s buried astroblemes at the time of the Flood, possibly as a trigger of Genesis 7:11.
22. Earth Impact Database, Planetary and Space Science Centre, University of New Brunswick: 190 confirmed impact structures, a figure unchanged since 2019.
23. William Worraker, “Heat Problems Associated with Genesis Flood Models—Part 4: Heat Deposited by Magmatic Activity,” *Answers Research Journal* 16 (2023): 201-251 (answersresearchjournal.org/noahs-flood/heat-problems-flood-models-4/), quoted from the abstract; the introduction states that the heat load of impacts from space “are to be considered in Part 6.” The mainstream reading of buried craters as strikes spread across geological time is the standard one in the impact literature summarized by the Earth Impact Database (note 22).

Chapter Seven — “A Blessing and a Curse”

1. The English wood shortage and the rise of sea coal, Newcomen’s engine (1712), Watt’s separate condenser (patent 1769), the Stockton and Darlington Railway (1825), the Bessemer process (1856) and Edison’s Pearl Street Station (1882) are standard, independently documented history; see E. A. Wrigley, *Energy and the English Industrial Revolution* (Cambridge University Press, 2010).
2. Coal’s share of world electricity generation (about a third): International Energy Agency, *Global Energy Review 2025*, “Electricity” (iea.org/reports/global-energy-review-2025/electricity).
3. Drake’s well at Titusville, Pennsylvania, August 27, 1859: American Oil & Gas Historical Society (aoghs.org), “Birth of the U.S. Oil Industry.”
4. Kerosene’s displacement of whale oil and the decline of American whaling after the 1850s: Eric Jay Dolin, *Leviathan: The History of Whaling in America* (W. W. Norton, 2007).
5. World oil demand of about 103 million barrels a day in 2025: Energy Institute, *Statistical Review of World Energy 2026*, as reported at dieselnet.com/news/2026/07energyreview.php.
6. William Hart’s natural gas well at Fredonia, New York (1821): American Oil & Gas Historical Society (aoghs.org), “Natural Gas Well of William Hart.”
7. Deaths from household air pollution (about 3.2 million a year): World Health Organization, “Household air pollution” fact sheet (who.int).
8. Haber (1909) and Bosch’s industrial process at Oppau (1913): “The industrialization of the Haber-Bosch process,” *Chemical & Engineering News* 101, no. 26 (2023). The estimate that synthetic nitrogen fertilizer supports close to half the world’s population: J. W. Erisman et al., “How a century of ammonia synthesis changed the world,” *Nature Geoscience* 1 (2008): 636-639; Our World in Data, “World population with and without synthetic nitrogen fertilizers” (ourworldindata.org).
9. Aspdin’s Portland cement patent (1824) and world cement production of about four billion tons a year: U.S. Geological Survey, *Mineral Commodity Summaries 2025*, “Cement.”

10. Jersey City's continuous chlorination of public water (1908) and the subsequent collapse of typhoid mortality: Centers for Disease Control and Prevention, "Achievements in Public Health, 1900-1999: Control of Infectious Diseases," *MMWR* 48, no. 29 (1999).
11. The share of U.S. phosphate rock used for fertilizer and feed: USGS, as in Chapter Six, note 16. The discovery of Florida's pebble phosphate in the 1880s: Florida Industrial and Phosphate Research Institute (fipr.poly.usf.edu).
12. Center-pivot irrigation and the Ogallala: "Ogallala Aquifer," *Encyclopedia of the Great Plains* (plainshumanities.unl.edu); EarthDate, "Depleting the Ogallala Aquifer" (earthdate.org).
13. Our World in Data, "Global average life expectancy has more than doubled since 1900" (ourworldindata.org/data-insights/global-average-life-expectancy-has-more-than-doubled-since-1900): 32 years in 1900, 73.2 in 2023.
14. Our World in Data, "Share of population living in extreme poverty" (ourworldindata.org/grapher/share-of-population-living-in-extreme-poverty-historical).
15. United Nations, Department of Economic and Social Affairs, *World Population Prospects*; the eight-billion milestone was marked on November 15, 2022.
16. Fossil fuels' share of world primary energy (roughly four-fifths): Energy Institute, *Statistical Review of World Energy* (energyinst.org/statistical-review).
17. Midgley's development of Freon (1928) and M. J. Molina and F. S. Rowland, "Stratospheric sink for chlorofluoromethanes," *Nature* 249 (1974): 810-812. Paul Müller received the 1948 Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine for DDT.
18. The October 1924 Bayway tetraethyl-lead poisonings (five dead; thirty-two of forty-nine men hospitalized) and Standard Oil's response: "When Work Drives You Mad: Tales From the Deadly 'Loony Gas' Building," *Mental Floss* (mentalfloss.com/article/67530); Bill Kovarik, "Ethyl: The 1920s Environmental Conflict over Leaded Gasoline," *International Journal of Occupational and Environmental Health* 11 (2005).
19. Garrett Hardin, "The Tragedy of the Commons," *Science* 162 (1968): 1243-1248.
20. Herbicide spraying in Vietnam (about 20 million gallons, 1962-1971): U.S. Department of Veterans Affairs, "Agent Orange" (va.gov). Hanford's roughly 56 million gallons of tank waste: U.S. Department of Energy, Hanford Site (hanford.gov). The 1991 Kuwait oil-well fires: U.S. Geological Survey and NASA Earth Observatory records of the 1991 Kuwaiti oil fires.

Chapter Eight — "What Man Has Put Into the Air"

1. John Evelyn, *Fumifugium*, *or*, *The Inconveniencie of the Aer and Smoak of London Dissipated* (1661); see "Fumifugium," Wikipedia, and "John Evelyn's Fumifugium," Environment & Society Portal (environmentandsociety.org). Edward I's 1306 proclamation against burning sea coal in London: P. Brimblecombe, *The Big Smoke: A History of Air Pollution in London Since Medieval Times* (Methuen, 1987).
2. "1948 Donora smog," Wikipedia; Pennsylvania Historical and Museum Commission, "Donora Smog Disaster" (phmc.state.pa.us); EPA Alumni Association, "Donora Smog of 1948" (epaalumni.org).
3. "Great Smog of London," Wikipedia; London Museum, "The Great Smog of 1952" (londonmuseum.org.uk); American Lung Association, "The 70th Anniversary of the 'Great Smog of London'" (lung.org).
4. "1966 New York City smog," Wikipedia; Energy Policy Institute at the University of Chicago, "The origin story of the air quality index and the toxic smaze that came before it" (aqli.epic.uchicago.edu), which records New York's early single-number air-quality index by 1966.

5. The July 26, 1943 Los Angeles "gas attack" and A. J. Haagen-Smit's 1952 identification of photochemical smog: South Coast Air Quality Management District, "The Southland's War on Smog" (aqmd.gov).
6. See Chapter Seven, note 18. Midgley's October 1924 press demonstration and his later treatment for lead poisoning are recorded in the same sources.
7. C. C. Patterson, "Contaminated and Natural Lead Environments of Man," *Archives of Environmental Health* 11 (1965): 344-360; "The Most Important Scientist You've Never Heard Of," *Mental Floss* (mentalfloss.com/article/94569).
8. United Nations Environment Programme, "Era of leaded petrol over, eliminating a major threat to human and planetary health," August 30, 2021 (unep.org).
9. M. J. McFarland, M. E. Hauer and A. Reuben, "Half of US population exposed to adverse lead levels in early childhood," *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 119 (2022); reported at ScienceDaily, March 7, 2022. The decline in U.S. children's blood lead: CDC, National Health and Nutrition Examination Survey (NHANES) blood lead data.
10. S. Zahran et al., "Leaded aviation gasoline exposure risk and child blood lead levels," *PNAS Nexus* 2 (2023): pgac285; U.S. EPA, "Finding That Lead Emissions From Aircraft Engines That Operate on Leaded Fuel Cause or Contribute to Air Pollution That May Reasonably Be Anticipated To Endanger Public Health and Welfare" (October 2023); Santa Clara County news release on the EPA determination (news.santaclaracounty.gov).
11. U.S. EPA, "Power Sector Programs — Progress Report: Emissions Reductions" (epa.gov/power-sector/progress-report-emissions-reductions): 96% reduction in SO2 and 90% in NOx from 1990 to 2023.
12. L. Henneman et al., "Mortality risk from United States coal electricity generation," *Science* 382 (2023): 941-946; National Institute on Aging, "Deaths associated with pollution from coal power plants" (nia.nih.gov).
13. World Meteorological Organization/UNEP, *Scientific Assessment of Ozone Depletion: 2022*, Executive Summary (csl.noaa.gov/assessments/ozone/2022/); UN News, "Ozone layer recovery is on track," January 9, 2023.
14. N. Hudda et al., "Emissions from an International Airport Increase Particle Number Concentrations 4-fold at 10 km Downwind," *Environmental Science & Technology* 48 (2014): 6628-6635; "Los Angeles Airport Pollutes City Air For Miles Downwind," *Chemical & Engineering News* (2014).
15. N. Hudda et al., "Aviation-Related Impacts on Ultrafine Particle Number Concentrations Outside and Inside Residences near an Airport," *Environmental Science & Technology* 52 (2018); University of Washington Mov-Up study, reported in the *Seattle Times*, "Little-understood, unregulated particles pollute neighborhoods under Sea-Tac flight paths"; Netherlands National Institute for Public Health and the Environment (RIVM), health study of ultrafine particles around Schiphol (2021).
16. P. J. Kole et al., "Wear and Tear of Tyres: A Stealthy Source of Microplastics in the Environment," *International Journal of Environmental Research and Public Health* 14 (2017): 1265.
17. OECD, *Non-exhaust Particulate Emissions from Road Transport: An Ignored Environmental Policy Challenge* (2020); summarized at dieselnet.com/news/2020/12oecd.php.
18. Health Effects Institute, *State of Global Air 2024*; UNICEF, "Air pollution accounted for 8.1 million deaths globally in 2021" (unicef.org).
19. Energy Policy Institute at the University of Chicago, "China's air quality policies have swiftly reduced pollution, improved life expectancy" (epic.uchicago.edu).

20. “2026-2027 El Niño event,” Wikipedia (accessed September 2026), summarizing reports of the Indonesian fires, the August 25 Kuala Lumpur air-quality reading, and the Indonesian Ministry of Health’s respiratory emergency figures.

Chapter Nine — “What Man Has Put Into the Water, the Land, and Our Own Bodies”

1. Raimondo di Soncino to the Duke of Milan, December 18, 1497; text at elfinspell.com (“Account of John Cabot’s Voyage to America”) and the University of Bristol’s maritime sources collection (bristol.ac.uk/Depts/History/Maritime/Sources/1497soncino.htm).
2. John Smith’s descriptions of the Chesapeake (1608) and the colonial accounts of waterfowl, as quoted in “History lessons for the future,” *Bay Journal* (bayjournal.com); see also University of Maryland Center for Environmental Science, “History of oysters” (umces.edu/oysters/history/).
3. U.S. Fish and Wildlife Service, “From Many, to Few, to None” (fws.gov/story/2014-08/many-few-none); Smithsonian Libraries, “Once There Were Billions” (2014).
4. “Cod fishery collapse of 1992,” *Encyclopaedia Britannica*; Heritage Newfoundland and Labrador, “Cod Moratorium” (heritage.nf.ca).
5. University of Maryland Center for Environmental Science, “Chesapeake Oyster Population Less Than One Percent of Historic Levels” (September 6, 2011); on the causes, “New study: Chesapeake oyster decline not due to overfishing,” *Bay Journal*.
6. W. T. Hornaday, *The Extermination of the American Bison* (Smithsonian, 1889).
7. “The Cuyahoga River Caught Fire at Least a Dozen Times, but No One Cared Until 1969,” *Smithsonian Magazine*; U.S. EPA, “Introduction to the Clean Water Act.”
8. “Toledo Issues Emergency ‘Do Not Drink Water’ Warning to Residents,” *Circle of Blue*, August 2014; NRDC, “Toledo’s Blooming Algae Crisis.”
9. NOAA National Centers for Coastal Ocean Science, “Below Average Summer 2025 ‘Dead Zone’ Measured in Gulf” (coastalscience.noaa.gov). On hypoxic zones worldwide: R. J. Diaz and R. Rosenberg, “Spreading Dead Zones and Consequences for Marine Ecosystems,” *Science* 321 (2008): 926-929.
10. Ministry of the Environment of Japan, *Minamata Disease: The History and Measures* (env.go.jp/en/chemi/hs/minamata2002/); “Four Big Pollution Diseases of Japan,” Wikipedia; UN Environment Programme, Minamata Convention on Mercury (mercuryconvention.org).
11. U.S. EPA, “Region 4 South Florida Project Information” (archive.epa.gov/emap/archive-emap/web/html/sflorida.html); South Florida Water Management District, *Everglades Interim Report*, Chapter 7, “The Everglades Mercury Problem” (1999); WLRN, “Everglades Marshes Contain Mercury That Can Poison Birds” (October 28, 2020).
12. UN Environment Programme, *Global Mercury Assessment 2018*; summarized by IISD, “UNEP Publishes 2018 Global Mercury Assessment” (sdg.iisd.org).
13. “Toxic Secret,” CBS News (July 11, 2002); NPR, “Anniston, Ala. Residents Await PCB Settlement” (September 8, 2003); U.S. Department of Justice press releases on the Anniston PCB site (2002).
14. U.S. EPA, “Hudson River Cleanup” (epa.gov/hudsonriverpcbs/hudson-river-cleanup); Scenic Hudson, “Understanding the Hudson’s PCB Cleanup.”
15. “The Teflon Toxin: DuPont and the Chemistry of Deception,” *The Intercept* (August 11, 2015); “Robert Bilott,” Wikipedia; C8 Science Panel findings (c8sciencepanel.org); “$671 Million Settlement of DuPont-Chemours Lawsuit,” Cory Watson (2017).

16. “3M’s Historic $10 Billion ‘Forever Chemical’ Payout,” *Time* (2023); New Jersey Office of the Attorney General, “Federal Court Approves Historic PFAS Settlements Valued at Approximately $2.5 Billion” (njoag.gov); *Philadelphia Inquirer*, August 8, 2026.
17. Agency for Toxic Substances and Disease Registry (CDC), “Human Exposure: PFAS Information for Clinicians — 2024” (atsdr.cdc.gov/pfas/hcp/clinical-overview/human-exposure.html); U.S. EPA, “PFAS National Primary Drinking Water Regulation” (April 2024).
18. “Love Canal,” *Encyclopaedia Britannica*; U.S. EPA Superfund site profile, Love Canal.
19. “Erin Brockovich and the Hinkley chromium case” — California State Water Resources Control Board, Lahontan Region, Hinkley groundwater records; the 1996 $333 million settlement is widely documented.
20. U.S. EPA, “EPA Announces Public Health Emergency in Libby, Montana” (June 17, 2009); Center for Asbestos Related Disease, Libby (libbyasbestos.org).
21. “Camp Lejeune water contamination,” Wikipedia; U.S. Department of Veterans Affairs, “Camp Lejeune water contamination health issues” (va.gov); CNN, “More than 385,000 Camp Lejeune contamination claims have been filed” (August 8, 2024).
22. Michigan Department of Attorney General, Flint water settlement (2021); Flint Water Advisory Task Force, *Final Report* (2016).
23. U.S. EPA, East Palestine, Ohio Train Derailment (epa.gov/east-palestine-oh-train-derailment); the 2024 $600 million class settlement is documented in the U.S. District Court for the Northern District of Ohio.
24. NOAA Office of Response and Restoration, “Exxon Valdez” and “Deepwater Horizon” (response.restoration.noaa.gov); U.S. Department of Justice, “U.S. and Five Gulf States Reach Historic Settlement with BP” (2015-2016).
25. UN Environment Programme, *Environmental Assessment of Ogoniland* (2011); “Nigeria: Drinking Water Polluted With Benzene At Levels 900 Times Above the Limit,” *Pressenza* (2011).
26. “Bhopal disaster,” *Encyclopaedia Britannica*; the Government of Madhya Pradesh’s official figure of 3,787 deaths.
27. Pew Charitable Trusts and SYSTEMIQ, *Breaking the Plastic Wave* (2020).
28. U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development, *American Healthy Homes Survey II* (2021), summarized at huduser.gov/portal/pdredge/pdr-edge-trending-030822.html.
29. H. A. Leslie et al., “Discovery and quantification of plastic particle pollution in human blood,” *Environment International* 163 (2022); M. Garcia et al., “Quantitation and identification of microplastics accumulation in human placental specimens,” *Toxicological Sciences* 199 (2024): 81-; A. J. Nihart et al., “Bioaccumulation of microplastics in decedent human brains,” *Nature Medicine* (2025).
30. Z. Tian et al., “A ubiquitous tire rubber-derived chemical induces acute mortality in coho salmon,” *Science* 371 (2021): 185-189; Washington State University Extension, “Deadly Stormwater Pollutants Target Coho Salmon Brain.”

Chapter Ten — “El Niño, the Warming World, and the Straight Answer”

1. The history of the name and of Walker’s and Bjerknes’s work: Harvard Salata Institute, “How we came to understand El Niño” (salatainstitute.harvard.edu); NASA Science, “El Niño” (science.nasa.gov/earth/explore/el-nino/); “El Niño-Southern Oscillation,” Wikipedia.

2. Carbon Brief, “Analysis: ‘Super El Niño’ breaks ‘remarkable’ all-time record” (carbonbrief.org, September 2026); *Washington Post*, “The ongoing El Niño has officially reached record levels” (September 21, 2026); NOAA Climate Prediction Center, ENSO Diagnostic Discussion.
3. “2026-2027 El Niño event,” Wikipedia (accessed September 2026), citing the Copernicus and NOAA sea-surface temperature records.
4. The same source as note 3, for the regional impacts and the June 4, 2026 FAO/WFP joint appeal.
5. Zeke Hausfather, “The impacts of this year’s record-shattering El Niño,” *The Climate Brink* (September 28, 2026).
6. The same source as note 5.
7. NOAA National Centers for Environmental Information, *Annual Global Climate Reports* (ncei.noaa.gov), for the rankings of 1998, 2016, 2022 and 2024.
8. See the Royal Institution, “Who discovered the greenhouse effect?” (rigb.org), and Skeptical Science, “Two Centuries of Climate Science” (skepticalscience.com).
9. Scripps Institution of Oceanography, The Keeling Curve (keelingcurve.ucsd.edu).
10. IPCC, First Assessment Report (1990), Second Assessment Report (1995), and Sixth Assessment Report, Working Group I, Summary for Policymakers, statement A.1 (2021) (ipcc.ch/report/ar6/wg1/chapter/summary-for-policymakers/).
11. NOAA Climate.gov, “Climate Change: Global Temperature”; Copernicus Climate Change Service, “Copernicus: 2025 was the third hottest year on record” (climate.copernicus.eu).
12. NASA, “Arctic Winter Sea Ice Ties Record Low” (science.nasa.gov/earth/arctic-winter-sea-ice-2026/).
13. NASA Jet Propulsion Laboratory, “NASA Analysis Shows Unexpected Amount of Sea Level Rise in 2024” (jpl.nasa.gov, March 2025).
14. NOAA Climate.gov, “Climate Change: Ocean Heat Content.”
15. Scripps Institution of Oceanography, “Annual Carbon Dioxide Peak Reaches 432 Parts per Million” (June 2026); on the ice-core record, NOAA Climate.gov, “Climate Change: Atmospheric Carbon Dioxide.”
16. Energy Institute, *Statistical Review of World Energy 2026*, as reported at dieselnet.com/news/2026/07energyreview.php.
17. NOAA Global Monitoring Laboratory, “What 13C Tells Us” (gml.noaa.gov/education/isotopes/c13tellsus.html). On the Suess effect and atmospheric oxygen, see the Scripps CO2 Program FAQ (scrippsco2.ucsd.edu/faq.html) and the Scripps O2 Program (scrippso2.ucsd.edu).
18. IPCC AR6 Working Group I, Summary for Policymakers, statements A.1.2 and A.1.3.
19. B. D. Santer et al., “Exceptional stratospheric contribution to human fingerprints on atmospheric temperature,” *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 120 (2023); IPCC AR6 WGI, Summary for Policymakers, on ozone depletion and lower-stratospheric cooling.
20. R. Neukom et al., “No evidence for globally coherent warm and cold periods over the preindustrial Common Era,” *Nature* 571 (2019): 550-554 (PAGES 2k Consortium).
21. Z. Hausfather et al., “Evaluating the performance of past climate model projections,” *Geophysical Research Letters* 47 (2020).
22. Michael J. Oard, “Is Man the Cause of Global Warming?”, Answers in Genesis, April 17, 2013 (answersingenesis.org/environmental-science/climate-change/is-man-the-cause-of-global-warming/); see also “The Globe Is Warming, But It’s Not Your Fault!” (answersingenesis.org).

Earlier versions of this study followed Oard's estimates; they are withdrawn in this version (see the Appendix).

23. IPCC AR6 WGI, Summary for Policymakers, statement A.4.4: equilibrium climate sensitivity best estimate 3°C, likely range 2.5-4°C.
24. "Four graphs that suggest we can't blame climate change on solar activity," *The Conversation*; NASA, "What Is the Sun's Role in Climate Change?" (science.nasa.gov).
25. The Medieval Warm Period (c. AD 950-1250), the Greenland Norse, the Little Ice Age (c. 1300-1850) and the Thames frost fairs are standard, independently documented episodes; see "Medieval Warm Period," Wikipedia.
26. Neukom et al. (note 20); "'Medieval Warm Period' Wasn't Global or Even All That Warm, Study Says," *Inside Climate News*.
27. RealClimate, "What does the lag of CO2 behind temperature in ice cores tell us about global warming?"; Skeptical Science, "CO2 lags temperature — what does it mean?"; J. D. Shakun et al., "Global warming preceded by increasing carbon dioxide concentrations during the last deglaciation," *Nature* 484 (2012): 49-54.
28. *Communications Earth & Environment* (nature.com/articles/s43247-026-03242-3) and ScienceDaily's coverage (sciencedaily.com/releases/2026/09/260906170128.htm).
29. IPCC AR6 WGI, Summary for Policymakers, statement A.3.1; Lancet Countdown on Health and Climate Change, *2025 Report* (lancetcountdown.org/2025-report/); Potsdam Institute for Climate Impact Research, "Annual heat-related deaths surge to 546,000 in the last decade due to climate change."
30. IPCC AR6 WGI, Summary for Policymakers, statements A.3.1-A.3.4 and Table SPM.1; Carbon Brief, "Explainer: what the new IPCC report says about extreme weather and climate change" (carbonbrief.org).
31. "Climatic Research Unit email controversy," Wikipedia; CNN, "Q&A: 'Climategate' explained" (2010); Berkeley Earth, "About" (berkeleyearth.org).
32. NOAA NCEI, "Wandering of the Geomagnetic Poles" (ncei.noaa.gov/products/wandering-geomagnetic-poles).
33. G. Supran, S. Rahmstorf and N. Oreskes, "Assessing ExxonMobil's global warming projections," *Science* 379 (2023): eabk0063; Potsdam Institute for Climate Impact Research, "New study in 'Science' puts a number on what Exxon knew decades ago about climate science" (January 2023).

Chapter Eleven — "From a Groaning Creation to a New Creation"

1. Romans 8:19-22.
2. 2 Peter 3:10, 13; 2 Peter 3:5-6 (already quoted in Chapter Four).
3. Revelation 21:1, 4.
4. Genesis 2:15 (already quoted in Chapter One).

Scripture Index

Genesis

1:1 Intro
1:5 Ch. 1 §I
1:8 Ch. 1 §I
1:13 Ch. 1 §I
1:14 Intro
1:19 Ch. 1 §I
1:23 Ch. 1 §I
1:28 Ch. 7 §V
1:31 Ch. 1 §I; Ch. 6 §VIII
2:7 Ch. 2-B; Ch. 8
2:15 Ch. 7 §VI
2:23 Ch. 2-B
3:15 Ch. 2-B
3:17 Ch. 2-B
3:21 Ch. 2-B
3:23 Ch. 2-B
4:4 Ch. 2-B
4:23 Ch. 2-B
4:26 Ch. 2-B
6:1 Ch. 2-B
6:5 Ch. 2-B
6:8 Ch. 2-B
6:11 Ch. 2-B
6:11-12 Ch. 7 §VII
6:13 Ch. 7 §VII
7:11 Ch. 2-B; Ch. 4 §II; Ch. 6 §VII; Ch. 6 §VIII
7:16 Ch. 2-B
7:19-20 Ch. 4 §I
8:1 Ch. 2-B
8:21 Ch. 2-B
8:22 Ch. 1 §IV; Ch. 10; Ch. 10 §XVI
9:13 Ch. 2-B
11:3 Ch. 6 §VII
14:10 Ch. 6 §VII

Exodus

2:3 Ch. 6 §VII
20:11 Ch. 1 §I

Leviticus

25:4 Ch. 7 §VI
25:23 Ch. 7 §VI

Numbers

23:19 Intro

Deuteronomy

4:19 Ch. 1 §V
8:17 Ch. 7 §V
8:18 Ch. 7 §V
20:19 Ch. 7 §VI
22:7 Ch. 7 §VI
30:19 Ch. 7
33:19 Ch. 6 §VII

Job

28:1-2 Ch. 6 §VII

Psalms

19:1 Intro
24:1 Ch. 6 §VII; Ch. 7 §VI
104:5 Ch. 10 §XVI
104:6-9 Ch. 1 §VI
104:8 Ch. 4 §IV

Proverbs

12:10 Ch. 7 §VI
14:31 Ch. 7 §VIII; Ch. 10 §XVI
22:3 Ch. 10 §XVII

Ecclesiastes

7:29 Ch. 7 §VII

Isaiah

45:3 Ch. 6 §VIII
45:18 Ch. 10 §XVI
47:13-14 Ch. 1 §V

Jeremiah

2:7 Ch. 9
10:2 Ch. 1 §V
12:4 Ch. 9 §II
12:11 Ch. 7 §VIII
18:8 Ch. 7 §IX
22:13 Ch. 7 §VIII
33:20 Ch. 1 §IV

Ezekiel
34:18 Ch. 7 §VIII
34:18-19 Ch. 9 §XII

Hosea
4:6 Ch. 7 §VIII

Malachi
3:6 Intro

Matthew
5:45 Ch. 10
24:38-39 Ch. 4 §I

Luke
12:47 Ch. 10 §XV
12:47-48 Ch. 7 §VIII
16:2 Ch. 7 §VI

John
3:34 Ch. 2-B
17:17 Intro

Acts
4:12 Intro

Romans
1:18 Intro
1:25 Ch. 10 §XVII
8:19-22 Ch. 11 §I
8:22 Ch. 6 §VIII
10:9 Intro

1 Corinthians
4:2 Ch. 7 §VI
15:22 Intro

1 Timothy
2:4 Intro
6:10 Ch. 7 §VIII

2 Timothy
1:7 Ch. 10 §XVII
3:16 Intro

James
1:17 Intro
3:10 Ch. 7
5:4 Ch. 7 §VIII

2 Peter
1:21 Intro
3:3-6 Ch. 1 §VI
3:5-6 Ch. 4 §I
3:10,13 Ch. 10 §XVI
3:10 Ch. 11 §II
3:13 Ch. 11 §II

1 John
1:5 Intro

Revelation
11:18 Ch. 7 §VII; Ch. 11
21:1 Ch. 11 §II
21:4 Ch. 11 §II